

# A HISTORY OF PETERSBURG NATIONAL BATTLEFIELD

by

Lee A. Wallace, Jr.

and

Martin R. Conway



1983

ON MICROFILM

8/3/00

A HISTORY OF PETERSBURG NATIONAL BATTLEFIELD

TO 1956

by

Lee A. Wallace, Jr.

and

A HISTORY OF PETERSBURG NATIONAL BATTLEFIELD

1957-1982

by

Martin R. Conway

*JOHN R. DAVIS, JR.*

History Division  
National Park Service  
Department of the Interior  
Washington, D.C.

1983

## Foreword

As park historian at Petersburg National Military Park from 1951 to 1957, Lee A. Wallace, Jr., was intensely interested in not only the Civil War events commemorated by his park but also the establishment and evolution of the park itself. Before leaving he prepared an excellent history of the park's origins and administration. Although it proved valuable to those at Petersburg with access to it, it was never reproduced for wider distribution and more permanent reference. And as time passed, new events at and affecting the park rendered it in need of updating.

When the National Park Service renewed its commitment to park administrative history beginning in 1981, an opportunity was provided to build on Wallace's effort. Although then in retirement, Wallace generously volunteered to review his text, make certain additions, and provide illustrations. To carry the bulk of the story after 1956, another hand was needed. This task fell to Martin R. Conway, who had served as Petersburg's superintendent from 1969 to 1972. Conway completed his addendum to the Wallace history in 1982 while assigned to the History Division in the Service's Washington Office.

The Wallace and Conway histories are essentially separate documents. Although bound together here, each is carried with its own table of contents and pagination. Appendixes and illustrations covering both periods appear at the end of the Conway portion.

Former Petersburg superintendents Chester L. Brooks, Larry L. Hakel, and Wallace B. Elms provided helpful review comments on the Conway manu-

script, which covered the periods of their administration. The present superintendent of Petersburg National Battlefield, Glenn O. Clark, and his staff deserve special appreciation for their careful review of both the Wallace and Conway manuscripts and the many valuable suggestions they contributed. May this product serve them and their successors well.

Edwin C. Bearss  
Chief Historian  
National Park Service

A HISTORY OF PETERSBURG NATIONAL BATTLEFIELD

TO 1956

by

Lee A. Wallace, Jr.

## CONTENTS

Acknowledgments	v
Chapter	
I. Historical Sketch of Petersburg Before 1861	1
II. Military Operations at Petersburg, 1862-1865	7
III. Petersburg Battlefields, 1865-1936	16
IV. Efforts to Establish a Park at Petersburg, 1898-1925	43
V. Establishment of the Petersburg National Military Park	58
VI. Petersburg National Military Park under the War Department	64
VII. Transfer of the Park to the Department of the Interior and Administrative Changes	81
VIII. Land Acquisitions--Roads and Trails	90
IX. The Crater	96
X. Historical-Educational and Interpretive Programs, 1933-1935	104
XI. Interpretive Markers, Outdoor Exhibits, and Self-Guiding Tours	108
XII. Interpretive Services and Visitation	116
XIII. Petersburg National Military Park and World War II	126
XIV. Historic Building Sites - Centre Hill Mansion	130
XV. Poplar Grove National Cemetery	135
Epilogue: 30th Anniversary, 1956	138
Notes	140
Bibliography	161

#### ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

Grateful acknowledgment is extended to the following who contributed to this effort: Superintendent Glenn O. Clark and Historians John Davis and Chris Calkins, Petersburg National Battlefield; Mrs. Doris Barber, Mrs. Mardell Wallace, Marilyn Wandrus, Tom DuRant, National Park Service, Springfield, Virginia; Robert K. Krick, Chief Historian, Fredericksburg National Military Park; Ralph Happel, retired historian, Fredericksburg National Military Park; Dr. James H. Bailey, Supervisor, Blandford Church Interpretation Center, Petersburg, Virginia; Wendell W. Lang, Jr., Tarrytown, New York; Emanuel Raymond Lewis, Librarian, House Library, U.S. House of Representatives, Washington, D.C.; Mrs. Elizabeth T. Lyon, Curator of Collections, Department of Tourism, Petersburg, Virginia; Karen P. Jennings, Division of History, Washington, D.C.

L. A. W., Jr.

## Chapter One

### Historical Sketch of Petersburg Before 1861

Exactly when the English settled at the site of Petersburg is uncertain, but we do know they were in the vicinity well before 1643, when Bristol Parish was created. Fort Henry was built at the falls of the Appomattox River in 1645 as a result of the Indian massacre the year before, and stood within the present-day boundaries of Petersburg. The fort offered protection for the settlers in the area and became a major trading center which served as a point of departure for westward expeditions. Closely associated with the story of Fort Henry was Major General Abraham Wood, one of the foremost figures in the history of 17th-century Virginia. Some have felt that Wood's name should have been given to the town that developed at the falls of the river, but that distinction, according to tradition, went to Wood's son-in-law, Major Peter Jones, who became prominent in the area as a soldier and operator of a trading post. An account published in 1833 says that Jones' business establishment was located a few rods west of the junction of what are now Sycamore and Old streets, and that "This position for trade was called 'Peter's Point,' subsequently changed to Petersburg." But Colonel William Byrd II of Westover is responsible for a more substantial record of the early beginnings of Petersburg. In 1733 he recorded, "We laid the foundation of two large cities. One at Shacco's to be called Richmond, and the other at the Point of Appomattox River, to be named Petersburgh." Actually, by the mid-18th century, two towns, almost contiguous, had appeared at the falls of the river, Petersburg and Blandford.<sup>1</sup>

In the American Revolution the two towns of Blandford and Petersburg enjoyed a relatively peaceful existence until the spring of 1781. With the

intent of destroying tobacco and capturing public stores at Petersburg, about 2,500 British troops, under Generals William Phillips and Benedict Arnold, landed at City Point on April 24, 1781. The march to Petersburg began the next morning. At noon on the twenty-fifth, when the day was the hottest, they halted to rest at Whitehill plantation, in the Battery Five area of what is now Petersburg National Battlefield.<sup>2</sup> About 2:00 P.M. the march was resumed, and at Blanford they met stubborn resistance by about a thousand militiamen, mostly raw recruits, under Brigadier General John Peter Gabriel Muhlenberg, the "fighting parson." The engagement is believed to have started near the brick Church of Saint Paul (now Blandford Church) on Wells' Hill.<sup>3</sup> Muhlenberg's troops were forced back toward Petersburg, where they made another stand in the vicinity of what is now Fifth Street, and then retreated over the Appomattox River by Pocahontas Bridge, and up Archer's Hill, on which now stands Violet Bank in the present city of Colonial Heights. The burning of the bridge burned some 4,000 hogsheads of tobacco. "Everything valuable," General Henry Lee reported, "was destroyed and the wealth of the town in a few hours disappeared."<sup>4</sup>

On May 10, 1781, General Lafayette placed his artillery on the opposite side of the Appomattox River and shelled the British in Petersburg. Three days later, May 13, General Phillips, ill with fever, died at his headquarters at the Bolling home, known as Bollingbrook and as East Hill. He was buried in Blandford churchyard, in the southeast corner, according to one tradition.<sup>5</sup> On May 20, Lord Cornwallis, who had marched from North Carolina, joined forces with the British under Arnold's command at Petersburg, and four days later they moved eastward in the direction of Yorktown.

In 1784, the General Assembly incorporated Blandford and a number of other neighboring communities into the borough of Petersburg. The town continued to grow with small manufacturing operations and a flourishing trade in tobacco,

flour, and hemp. Benjamin Henry Latrobe, who came to Petersburg in 1796, said that 2,200 hogsheads of tobacco were inspected there annually, and the town and suburbs contained 3,000 inhabitants. By the end of the century, Petersburg was one of the new nation's most important towns.<sup>6</sup>

The second war with Britain broke out in 1812, and on October 21 of that year the Petersburg Volunteers, 103 men under Captain Richard McRae left the town to join the Northwestern Army in Ohio. At the siege and battle of Fort Meigs in May 1813, McRae's company won distinction and earned for Petersburg the sobriquet "Cockade of the Union." Although the exact wording has been altered over the years, Petersburg is still referred to as the "Cockade City."<sup>7</sup>

The first half of the 19th century was a prosperous time for Petersburg, which expanded as an industrial and agricultural center with tobacco as its leading product. Of much significance was the development of the cotton industry and the iron foundries, which turned out, among other commodities, agricultural implements, locomotives, and other equipment needed by the railroads serving the area. Their development was an immeasurable factor in the growing prosperity of Petersburg and contributed to the importance the city would later have for the Confederacy.

The first of the railroads entering Petersburg was the 60-mile line south to Weldon, North Carolina. In operation by 1833, it proved to be a tremendous boost to the Petersburg cotton and tobacco markets. Passengers could make the trip, which formerly took two days, in four hours, even allowing for the regular station stops. In 1837 a railroad was in operation between Petersburg and City Point (now Hopewell) at the confluence of the James and Appomattox rivers. The Appomattox was too shallow, narrow, and winding to permit large vessels to dock at Petersburg. Before the railroad was constructed it was claimed that it took longer to transport goods from City Point to Petersburg than between

New York and City Point. The railroad to Richmond was chartered in 1836 and completed two years later. Opponents of this line feared that it would make it easier to ship to Richmond produce which could otherwise be marketed in Petersburg. In 1846 a western line, the Southside Railroad, was chartered, and in 1854 the railroad to Lynchburg was finished. Finally in 1858 the railroad to Norfolk was completed, its engineer, William Mahone, having performed an outstanding piece of engineering in constructing the line through Dismal Swamp.<sup>8</sup>

Important, but to a lesser extent, were the roads entering the city. In the early part of the 19th century, a turnpike, an improvement over the old stage road, was constructed between Richmond and Petersburg. But the most outstanding prewar road project was the building of the plank roads, which were believed to be the answer to the never-ending road problem. The first of these to be constructed, in 1850, was the Boydton Plank Road, which ran about 60 miles southwest to Boydton, in Mecklenburg County. The second, built in 1853, was the Jerusalem Plank Road, which extended southwardly about 45 miles to Jerusalem, now called Courtland, in Southampton County. It was not long before the planking began to decay and break under the strain of heavy wagons and teams. The washing away of the planking by severe rains was another problem, and by 1858 the plank roads for the most part existed only in their names.<sup>9</sup>

Nearby City Point with its deep harbor was advantageous to Petersburg, but the city did not lag in the use of its own, although restricted, harbor. In addition to coastal shipping, foreign trade had long been carried on from Petersburg. In 1835, for example, there was a considerable amount of trade with England, Holland, and Germany, and some 20 years later, one observer noted between 20 and 30 vessels at the wharves, representing New York, Philadelphia, Boston, Portland, Baltimore, and Charleston.<sup>10</sup>

From a town with a population of 3,521 in 1800, Petersburg had expanded in 1850 to a city with 14,010, the third largest in Virginia. Richmond, with a population of 27,570, almost doubled that of Petersburg, but Norfolk, the second largest, had only about 300 more inhabitants. Concurrent with Petersburg's economic and population growth was increase in the number of schools and churches and the construction of commercial and residential buildings, many of which are still remembered for their architecture and historic associations.<sup>11</sup>

Petersburg's military history in the prewar years was also of no little consequence. It furnished two companies for the First Regiment Virginia Volunteers raised in 1847 for service in the Mexican War. The first to be organized was Company E under Captain Fletcher Harris Archer, whose name was destined to shine in the story of Petersburg during the next war. Greater fame, however, awaited Second Lieutenant David A. Weisiger, who would become a brigadier general in the army of the Confederate States. Company D, under Captain William M. Robinson, was the second company from Petersburg. The regiment, discharged at Fort Monroe in July 1848, saw hard service in Mexico but was never engaged in battle.<sup>12</sup>

The city boasted some splendid and handsomely uniformed volunteer militia companies, such as the Petersburg Greys, organized in 1828; the Petersburg Artillery, organized in 1843; and the Petersburg City Light Infantry Guard, which dated from 1852. These companies were attached to the 39th Regiment of militia. Troop musters, parades, and other events of a military nature usually held at Poplar Lawn in the heart of the city were big occasions for antebellum Petersburg. In November 1859, the Greys, Artillery, and City Guards, under Colonel David A. Weisiger, were sent to garrison Charlestown during the John Brown crisis. On December 2, the Greys was one of the six companies assigned to escort Brown to the gallows. The John Brown episode created much unrest in

Virginia and resulted in the organization of many new companies of volunteer militia. Four companies were raised in Petersburg: the Petersburg Greys, Company B; Petersburg Light Dragoons; Petersburg Riflemen; and the Continental Guard, which eventually disbanded. In January 1861 the Lafayette Guard, a new company; Petersburg Artillery; Petersburg Riflemen; and the City Guard were organized into the Fourth Battalion Virginia Volunteers under Weisiger, who was elected major, commanding the battalion.<sup>13</sup>

On April 17, 1861, the Virginia Convention passed the ordinance of secession and authorized the governor to call troops into the service of the state. Major Weisiger was ordered to hold his command in readiness, and on April 20 the battalion and the two companies of Petersburg Greys, all under the command of Major Weisiger, left by train for Norfolk and the war. New volunteer companies were soon raised, and in all, Petersburg during 1861-1862 sent out eleven companies of infantry, three of artillery, and three companies of cavalry.<sup>14</sup>

## Chapter Two

### Military Operations at Petersburg, 1862-1865

Although Petersburg's chief importance to the Confederacy was its railroads, the city did have its industrial significance. Records are far from complete on this aspect, but it is apparent that the local iron works and foundries were not long in producing weapons and other military material. In May 1861, the Petersburg Daily Express announced that the foundry of Tappey & Lumsden had made a revolving cannon, presumably on the order of Captain Henry Clay Pate, a Petersburg lawyer, editor, and adventurer, who raised a company of cavalry. Although the revolving cannon was not adopted by the War Department, it exists today as a unique specimen of period ordnance.<sup>1</sup> Another foundry, that of Uriah Wells, was reported in July 1861 as having turned out thousands of bowie knives and as having numerous orders for swords. Before the war, Wells' foundry produced locomotives, dredging machines, iron fences, iron store fronts, and various agricultural implements.<sup>2</sup> In August 1861, I. & J. Van Pelt received a government order for 25 6-pounder carriages and caissons. At the same time, 25 6-pounder carriages and caissons and five 24-pounder carriages were ordered from Tappey & Lumsden.<sup>3</sup>

By the summer of 1862, a lead smelting works established by the Confederate Ordnance Bureau was in operation at Petersburg. Located on Halifax Street near Butterworth's Bridge, the plant, under the able direction of Dr. Aaron Snowden Piggot, formerly of Baltimore, was capable of smelting thousands of pounds of lead a day.<sup>4</sup> The Navy Department had powder mills at Petersburg early in 1862, but later in the year, all of the machinery and fixtures were removed to Columbia, South Carolina.<sup>5</sup> The Navy Department also had by January 1, 1863, a ropewalk in operation at Petersburg. It not only produced enough cordage of

all dimensions for the navy and army, but enough to fill large orders from coal mines, railroads, and canal companies. But late in 1864, as the Union forces closed in on Petersburg, the operation was moved farther south.<sup>6</sup>

#### The Dimmock Line

After McClellan's threat to Richmond in 1862, authorities became aware of the need for a system of field fortifications around Petersburg. In August of that year work was begun under the supervision of Captain Charles H. Dimmock, C. S. Engineer Bureau. At the request of Captain Dimmock, the Common Council of Petersburg sent over 200 slaves and free blacks to work on the defenses. Later, hundreds of blacks were impressed from the surrounding counties. When completed in 1863, the "Dimmock Line," as it was called, extended for ten miles around Petersburg and contained emplacements for 55 artillery batteries, which were numbered consecutively from east to west.<sup>7</sup>

The Dimmock Line came into use in early May 1864, when Butler's Army of the James attacked the defenses between the James and Appomattox rivers and on May 6 occupied without opposition City Point, only eight miles east of Petersburg. A regiment of North Carolina infantry and about twelve pieces of artillery were sent out on the City Point Road to occupy the lines on May 5, when Union forces were known to be off City Point. In time more troops, mostly reserves and second class militia, were sent into positions along the Dimmock line east and southeast of the city. For some 30 days they waited in anticipation of an advance by the enemy, which came early in June.<sup>8</sup>

#### Battle of June 9, 1864

In the annals of Petersburg history no event is more revered than the Battle of June 9, 1864, when Union forces numbering about 4,500 infantry under

Major General Quincy A. Gillmore and 1,300 cavalry under Brigadier General August V. Kautz attempted to take the city. Gillmore's infantry took up positions east of Petersburg, but overestimating the number of Confederate troops in the line east of the city, remained inactive. Kautz's cavalry continued to the Jerusalem Plank Road and approached from the south. At Battery 29 on the Dimmock line, his advance was checked by a single gun detached from Sturdivant's battery, which was in the lines east of the city, and Major Fletcher H. Archer's small force of 125 reserves and second class militia, who were too young or old for regular service. More than half of them were killed, wounded, and captured, but the "old men and boys" managed to hold off Kautz until the arrival of reinforcements saved the day for Petersburg.<sup>9</sup>

#### Siege of Petersburg

By the time Grant's army approached Petersburg in June 1864, the Petersburg & Weldon and Southside railroads had assumed a role of vital importance as supply routes. This was especially true of the line to Weldon, North Carolina, which was at the junction of another railroad extending southeast to Wilmington, where blockade runners brought in much needed supplies from Europe. The railroads were also of immense value in the transporting of troops.

After his repulse at Cold Harbor June 3, 1864, General Grant temporarily abandoned his main objective, which was the destruction of the Army of Northern Virginia, in favor of taking Richmond. His plan was to capture Petersburg, roll up the Confederate defenses between there and Richmond, and then invest Richmond from the west. The capture of Petersburg would leave the Confederate capital with but one railroad, the Richmond & Danville, and this Grant proposed to cut after taking Petersburg. Crossing the James and Appomattox rivers over pontoon bridges, the Union forces arrived east of Petersburg on June 15 and

attacked the Confederate line that evening about seven o'clock in the vicinity of Battery Five. Beauregard, in command at Petersburg, had less than 3,000 as opposed to the 18,000 of the Eighteenth Union Army Corps which made the initial attack.

By midnight nearly two miles of the Dimmock Line had been captured, and the Confederates fell back to take up new positions along Harrisons Creek. More of the line gave way, and on the night of June 17 Beauregard, who had reinforcements drawn from the Richmond lines, ordered a general withdrawal to establish a new line closer to the city. A general assault by the Union army, now heavily reinforced, began at 4:00 a.m. on June 18, with the major drive in the afternoon. It was then that the First Maine Heavy Artillery, serving as infantry, made their futile attack from the Prince George Court House Road, near the Hare house. Met with a heavy crossfire, the Maine regiment, 850 strong, emerged less than a half an hour later with 632 casualties. Darkness ended the battle, with both armies stalemated in positions they would hold for the next nine months.

The first attempt to cut the Weldon Railroad began three days after the attack of June 18 failed. The small force moving toward the railroad on June 22 was halted by the divisions of William Mahone and Cadmus Wilcox, but on June 23 some cavalry reached the railroad and started on its destruction. Confederate attacks brought an end to this activity and forced them to withdraw from the vicinity of the railroad. The effort was a failure but it pointed to the course of the fighting ahead, the encirclement of Petersburg.

Grant's army numbered about 112,000, and he had little to worry about insofar as reinforcements were concerned. Lee, however, had only between 47,000 and 51,000, with little prospect of substantial replacements. His line now stretched from White Oak Swamp east of Richmond south to the Jerusalem

plank Road, a distance of 26 miles. It soon became clear that the struggle for Petersburg would be a lengthy one, certainly much longer than originally foreseen. Orders were issued July 9, 1864, from Headquarters, Army of the Potomac, outlining the conduct of future operations, which would now assume the characteristics of siege warfare. Working parties from the Ninth and Fifth Army Corps were detailed to the chiefs of engineers and artillery for the construction of fortifications. Materials such as gabions, fascines, and sandbags necessary for the building of fortified positions were to be prepared by troops detailed from units behind the lines.<sup>10</sup>

The spectacular mine explosion and the Battle of the Crater July 30, 1864, marked one more attempt by the Union forces to enter Petersburg by a frontal attack. At noon June 25, 1864, the 48th Regiment Pennsylvania Veteran Volunteer Infantry, composed largely of former coal miners, began digging a tunnel which was ultimately to extend beneath the Confederate line at Elliott's Salient, east of the city. The Union plan was to explode a large charge of powder and blow a gap in the defenses, through which their forces were to attack while the Confederates were still dazed and confused by the shock of the explosion. When complete on July 23, the tunnel was 586 feet in length. Rumors of the tunnel reached the Confederates soon after the Union mining operations began, and on July 1, countermines were started in an effort to locate the Union tunnel. About 4:45 A.M. on July 30, a tremendous explosion shook the earth east of the city: the mine of 8,000 pounds of powder had exploded, making a crater nearly 170 feet in length, 60 feet wide, and about 30 feet deep. Two hundred and seventy-eight Confederates lost their lives in the explosion. Poor planning and leadership muddled the Union attack. By 2:00 P.M. after three counterattacks by Virginia, Alabama, and Georgia troops under General William Mahone, the broken line was restored. Union casualties were estimated at slightly more

than 4,000, which included about 2,000 captured, while the Confederate casualties were estimated at about 1,500.<sup>11</sup>

On August 17, Grant ordered General Gouverneur K. Warren to move his Fifth Corps against the Weldon Railroad and destroy as much of the track as possible. Warren reached the railroad on August 18, near Globe Tavern. The fighting continued, Warren held his position, and by the end of August 21, Lee realized that the upper portion of the Weldon Railroad was lost, and the left flank of Grant's army now rested on the railroad. This was the first of a series of successful flanking moves which would ultimately determine the fate of Petersburg.

For a time the Confederates were able to use the railroad as far as Stony Creek, 20 miles below Petersburg. From Stony Creek supplies were hauled into Petersburg by wagon trains, by way of Dinwiddie Court House, a distance of 30 miles.

On August 25, part of A. P. Hill's Corps made a surprise attack on elements of the Second Corps engaged in destroying the railroad tracks at Reams Station, about five miles below Globe Tavern. It was a minor victory of short duration, as the Confederates withdrew and the destruction of the track was continued.

To facilitate the transportation of supplies, Union engineers on September 1 began the construction of a railroad to the western flank of Grant's lines south of Petersburg. Branch lines were added, and when completed in February 1865, the City Point & Army line had a total of 21 miles of track. An average of nine trains, exclusive of specials, were run each way daily. In addition to freight trains, two passenger trains operated each day, carrying mail, officers, and others to and from the lines.<sup>12</sup>

Confusion reigned near City Point on September 16, when about 4,000 cavalrymen under General Wade Hampton rode behind Union lines and captured 2,487 head

of cattle, plus more than 300 prisoners and 11 wagons of supplies. This was accomplished within five miles of Union Army headquarters at City Point. Efforts to intercept the raiders on their return ride failed, and the cavalymen returned to Petersburg safely after a circuit of 100 miles. The "Cattle Raid," accomplished with a loss of only 61 men, was one of the most daring feats of the war.<sup>13</sup>

Now that the Weldon Railroad had been cut, Grant's attention was directed toward reaching the Southside Railroad and the Appomattox River west of Petersburg. The Battle of Peebles Farm, September 20-October 1, extended the Union left flank three miles west of the Weldon Railroad, but at a cost of over 1,000 killed and wounded and over 1,500 lost as prisoners. It was on the ground gained by this battle that Forts Urmston, Fisher, Welch, Conahey, and Gregg were constructed. Peebles Farm had actually been part of a two-part assault on Lee's defenses, the other being directed at Fort Harrison, a strong position on the lines east of Richmond. Both attacks met with success.<sup>14</sup>

On October 23, the Confederates occupied a new line, which extended five miles southwest of Petersburg to Hatchers Run. A drive toward the Southside Railroad by the Union Second and Fifth Corps was turned back by the Confederates October 27 at Burgess Mill, where the Boydton Plank Road crosses Hatchers Run the southernmost end of the new defenses. During the winter, the Confederate defenses near Burgess Mill were extended westward along the White Oak Road to the Claiborne Road. On February 9, 1865, following an unsuccessful move on the Boydton Plank Road, the Union forces fell back and established a line which extended from the vicinity of Fort Fisher 2-1/2 miles south to Hatchers Run.

Lee's defenses by the spring of 1865 extended for 35 miles, from the White Oak Swamp east of Richmond to Hatchers Run southwest of Petersburg. Foreseeing the line would be broken by Grant's vastly superior numbers, Lee attacked east of Petersburg at Fort Stedman at 4:00 A.M. March 25, 1865, in a desperate attempt to penetrate Grant's right and cut the military railroad which supplied his extended lines. Under General John B. Gordon, the carefully planned attack went well at first. Fort Stedman was easily captured, and his columns charged through the breach, enlarging the gap to the right and left. But then, in the center, the Confederate columns were stopped at Harrisons Creek a quarter of a mile beyond Fort Stedman. On the flanks of the breach, the advance was checked by enfilading fire from Fort Haskell and Battery Nine. At daybreak the Union artillery opened with a terrific bombardment. Lee, seeing the attack had failed, ordered a withdrawal, but at the same time General John R. Hartranft's Third Division, Ninth Corps, counterattacked. By 7:45 A.M. the Union line was completely restored and the battle was over, with Confederate losses at more than 4,000 killed, wounded, and captured. Union casualties were less than 1,500.

Four days after the attack on Fort Stedman, General Phil Sheridan's cavalry and Warren's Fifth Corps were sent southwest to Dinwiddie Court House to cut the Southside Railroad and reach the Appomattox River west of Petersburg. Confederate troops under Generals George E. Pickett and Fitzhugh Lee scored a minor victory on March 31 near Dinwiddie Court House, when they turned back the advance elements of Sheridan's command. But as they were outnumbered, the Confederates withdrew and entrenched at Five Forks, three miles south of the Southside Railroad. Sheridan and Warren's Corps attacked Five Forks early the next day, April 1, and by

nightfall the Confederates had been routed. The success at Five Forks enabled the Union forces to reach the Southside Railroad and the river. On the next day, April 2, about 7:00 A.M., Grant's army attacked the defense line at Petersburg, and by 9:30 A.M. the line which led to Hatchers Run had been captured. The Union troops now returned in full force to attack the defenses west of Petersburg, which extended from Fort Gregg on the Boydton Plank Road north to the river. Taking advantage of the time gained by the heroic defense at Fort Gregg, the Confederates fell back to a new line east of Old Indian Town Creek. Bonfires dotted the Confederate lines around Petersburg that night, and about 8:00 P.M. the Army of Northern Virginia began leaving the city. Richmond was evacuated the same night. By 4:30 A.M. April 3, Michigan troops had placed their flags on the Petersburg Courthouse and Post Office. The seige of Petersburg was over, with a cost of more than 28,000 for Lee's army and at least 42,000 for Grant's. Within a week after the evacuation of Petersburg, the Army of Northern Virginia surrendered at Appomattox Court House, nearly 100 miles west.<sup>15</sup>

### Chapter Three

#### Petersburg Battlefields, 1865-1936

When the fighting ended at Petersburg in April 1865, the vestiges of ten months of siege warfare were to be seen on the battlefields, which covered over 170 square miles. It was here that the art of field fortifications reached its peak during the war. Nearly 70 miles of abandoned earthworks constructed by both armies stretched from the James River east of Richmond to southwest of Petersburg. Long lines of trenches connected over 150 forts and batteries. In front of the lines were the various obstructions made of timber used as protection against assaults: fraise, abatis, and chevaux-de-frise. Behind the vacated lines were the remains of hundreds of log huts built during the winter of 1864-1865. The fields, which had been under cultivation before the arrival of the armies, lay desolate, and as one observer put it, "not a field but had been sown with bullets, and ploughed with shot and shell."<sup>1</sup>

The curious were undoubtedly among the first to roam over the deserted battlefields, and for the souvenir-minded, pickings were abundant. More numerous, however, were the local inhabitants intent on carrying away logs, planks from gum platforms, and other materials for repairing buildings and fences. Abatis, gabions, and fascines were carted away as firewood. The salvaging of iron, brass, and lead was another profitable enterprise. One battlefield visitor late in 1865 observed a man and woman digging out bullets, which brought four cents a pound. It was hard work, he wrote, but they made a living from it. A Petersburg dealer, another visitor wrote in 1867, shipped 25 tons of lead to Baltimore, and two years later another visitor, Russell H. Conwell, commented that

bullets sold for \$100 a ton. "The shot and shell are fast being melted into ploughshares and machinery," he said, "and the missiles of war become instruments of peace."<sup>2</sup>

It was inevitable that the battlefields would become an attraction for sightseers as well as scavengers, and what appears to have been the first party of genuine tourists arrived before the war ended. On April 4, 1865, the yacht Octavius arrived at City Point with five Englishmen and three Americans who, having defied army authorities at Fort Monroe, were determined to see the battleground. Going ashore, the group visited hospitals and applied for passes to visit Petersburg. On the next day they talked the Superintendent of the Military Railroads into placing a special engine and car at their disposal and proceeded to Petersburg, "being the first civilians that had entered the town," according to one of the group. They visited the fortifications and observed that:

The dead were buried on the plain, but in the trenches numbers were lying as they fell during the assault, nearly all being shot through the head. Ammunition of every description, broken rifles and bayonets, blood-stained uniforms were scattered all over the trenches, torn up by the explosion of heavy shells in places, and literally sown in parts with shot, shell and bullets.

One of the Englishmen, Edward Kennard, made a number of pencil sketches which, with a flowery description based on a letter written by another of the party, were published anonymously in London late in 1865 under the title Transatlantic Sketches: or, Sixty Days in America.<sup>3</sup>

Napoleon M. Hawes, a paroled soldier, was among the earliest to eye the battlefield visitor as a source of income. On July 4, 1865, the Petersburg Daily Index carried an announcement that Hawes had opened a "Retreat" in the vicinity of Fort Stedman where wines, malt liquors, lemonade, and cakes would be sold. The announcement stated that "The

umbrageous foliage of the grove, the verdure of the adjacent grounds, and the famous military works immediately at the spot, all form rare attractions for the visitor and the tourists." Hawes did not have long to enjoy the benefits of his enterprise for he died in October of that year.<sup>4</sup>

Journalist John T. Trowbridge included the Petersburg battlefields on his Southern tour late in 1865. With a colonel of Major General John Gibbon's staff as a guide, Trowbridge toured the Union and Confederate lines with stops at the Crater, Fort Mahone (Fort Damnation), and Fort Sedgwick (Fort Hell), where he explored the bombproofs and the magazine, which he found to be "a cave with deep dark chambers and walls covered with sweat." They drove on a corduroy road built by the army and passed over open fields once covered with forest and across the Norfolk & Petersburg Railroad, which was completely bare of sleepers and rails. Passing Fort Morton, they drove on to stop at Fort Stedman. Later in the day, after returning to Petersburg, Trowbridge and the colonel resumed their excursion and visited the more distant fortifications south of the city.<sup>5</sup>

Jarratt's Hotel, an antebellum establishment on Washington Street in Petersburg, was acquired on April 8, 1865, by James H. Platt, formerly colonel of the Third Vermont Infantry and a veteran of the siege of Petersburg. Under his management Jarratt's became a popular hostelry for Union officers, Freedmen's Bureau officials, and Northern visitors to the city.<sup>6</sup> In 1866, Platt brought out a 27-page booklet, A Guide to the Fortifications and Battlefields Around Petersburg, which is believed to be the first published guide to a Civil War battlefield. It contained Michler's map of the entrenchments around the city and a text which described in some detail the war at Petersburg and its physical remains

on the battlefields. Appended was a letter by Orange Judd to the American Agriculturist, June 7, 1865, describing his two-day tour of the battlefields. Five others were with him in a spring-wagon which contained a box of food, a jug of water, field glasses, and "some bags for holding relics." They drove past, according to Judd, thousands of soldiers' huts and along the lines of fortifications, where much of the abatis and fraise were still in place. Judd cited as the most interesting places to see Fort Gregg (Confederate), the 50th New York Engineers' log church at Poplar Grove, the signal tower at Peebles Farm, Fort Wadsworth, Fort Sedgwick, the Crater, and Fort Stedman. On horseback, he wrote, it was possible to see all of these sites in a day, but two or three days, he believed, would be far more satisfactory.<sup>7</sup>

Jarratt's Hotel in 1869 was under a new proprietor, Phillip F. Brown, a Confederate veteran, who in that year published a new edition of A Guide to the Fortifications and Battlefields Around Petersburg. This rather curious 32-page pamphlet, intended as a "Hand-Book" for the tourist, included Michler's map of the entrenchments around Petersburg and an 18-page account of the siege with references to interesting sites to visit; and there its usefulness as a battlefield guide ends. The remaining 14 pages include Lee's General Orders No. 9, an article on the suffering of prisoners of war, some poetry, and reprints of the first four issues of "The Cricket on the Hearth," a literary monthly published in Philadelphia in 1862. There is also a cut of a lithograph, "The Specture," designed by Thomas Morgan and Anthony Dibrell of Petersburg, which depicts the last national flag of the Confederacy surrounded by war scenes.<sup>8</sup>

Not a few of the many Northerners who came to Petersburg were those whose knowledge about battlefields was confined to what they had read.

Trowbridge, for one, had spent the war in Boston writing antislavery tracts. In the impoverished South, there could not have been any great desire to travel from afar to see other reminders of the war. But Southerners did come, and there must have been others like Beauregard, Johnson Hagood, and Henry Heth, all former general officers of the late Confederacy, who had taken part in the struggle at Petersburg. Like Beauregard, who came in October 1867, Heth and Hagood must have been motivated by professional curiosity. Beauregard was familiar enough with the defenses but wanted to see the earthworks erected by the Union forces.<sup>9</sup>

Although large numbers of visitors were attracted soon after the war, there seems to have been little interest, except at the Crater and Fort Stedman, in preserving the fortifications. As the years passed, earthworks began to disappear under cultivation, and as early as June 25, 1867, a visitor wrote:

He who seeks, by a survey of the ground at this day to re-establish in his own mind the old lines of the Army of Northern Virginia, in front of Petersburg, has before him a difficult task, unless he was an actor in the scenes that took place here.... His imagination must restore those broken redoubts and trenches that, starting from the Appomattox, swung around the circle of the arc towards Hatcher's Run. At present the lines are little more than imaginary lines, broken here and there by embankments and trenches partly filled up by the plow of the husbandman. True, there are traces everywhere of the trail of war winding about over the hills, but to define and mark with the vision a continuous line is difficult.... The implements of husbandry have, in many places, triumphed over the implements of war.<sup>10</sup>

An unsympathetic news item in 1867 noted the leveling of fortifications by farmers and predicted:

In a few years the great bulk of these works will have been plowed and dug down, and in the place of the rank weeds that now flourish and decay about them, the harvest will be gathered.

Some of the stupendous forts may stand the test of time and be visited by the curious, but they alone in the generations to follow will tell the tale of the siege of Petersburg.<sup>11</sup>

The removal of log revetments and the other means used by the armies to hold the earth in place was a slow but certain factor in the erosion of the earthworks. Orange Judd in June 1865 noted that abatis were rapidly being removed for firewood and foresaw that "This, with the washing down of the many earthridges and rifle-pits by rains, and the leveling of others for agricultural purposes, will materially change the appearance of the whole region ere long."<sup>12</sup> Trowbridge was impressed with their excellent state of preservation in August 1865, but in the following month the Petersburg Daily Express noted that the earthworks were crumbling away.<sup>13</sup> A writer for the Army & Navy Journal in 1866 observed too that Fort Conahey, the casemated fort near the signal tower at Peebles Farm, was yielding fast.<sup>14</sup>

Two of the greatest losses to agriculture were Fort Morton and Fort Mahone. Fort Morton, opposite Elliott's Salient on the Confederate line, was called the "14-gun battery" during the Battle of the Crater when it served as the headquarters of General Burnside. Located on the Taylor farm, it was still intact late in 1865, but when John D. Billings, formerly of the Tenth Massachusetts Battery, visited the area in 1888, Fort Morton had been leveled. Richard F. Taylor, who was living there, showed Billings where he believed the fort was located. "This fort took up much valuable land," Taylor told him, "so I set to work carting it away. Yonder is a small corner of it." From there, Billings was able to find Battery XIV, in ruins and covered with brush and briars. He also found that the earthworks between Fort Morton and the battery had been leveled. Fort Mahone (Fort Damnation) was on the Confederate defenses opposite Fort Sedgwick (Fort Hell). It stood for 15 years or so after the war, but in 1883 visiting New Jersey veterans found a grain field and a new

farm house on the site. Later, some controversy arose as to the exact location of the fort, but it was eventually resolved in the preparations for locating the Pennsylvania monument, which was erected on the agreed site and dedicated in 1909.<sup>15</sup>

The New Jersey veterans in 1883 found that Fort Sedgwick had changed considerably since the war. The parapets were intact, but the fort had grown up in tall grass and young pines. The rifle pits in front of the fort were found to be splendidly preserved by the deep-rooted grass which prevented erosion better than the original wooden revetments. At Fort Davis they found the parapets in comparatively good condition, but the bombproofs had all fallen in. No trees were then in the fort, but shrubbery about eight or ten feet high had grown up in the ditch around the fort. Regrettably, Fort Sedgwick, which the park failed to acquire, was leveled in 1966, but Fort Davis remains intact.<sup>16</sup>

Kennard and his party, who came to Petersburg in April 1865, were among the few if not the only civilian battlefield tourists to travel on the City Point & Army Line. On April 3, after the evacuation of Petersburg, the military railroad was abandoned, and in June 1865 the tracks were removed. Traces of the railroad bed were discernible as late as 1934, and some may yet remain.<sup>17</sup>

Buildings and other structural remainders from the war began to disappear from the scene soon after the fighting was over. Residences frequently appear in documentary material relating to the operations around Petersburg. In general these dwellings suffered much damage during the conflict and in some instances were left in ruins. Some were utilized as headquarters, signal stations, and field hospitals. Others, especially small farm houses, were demolished for their materials, which

were used in the construction of soldiers' quarters and for other military purposes. To approach even a preliminary report on these structures is far beyond the scope of this brief survey, but there are a few dwellings of particular note which should receive attention.

Near, but outside, the present boundaries of the Petersburg National Battlefield was the Avery house, which stood on the Union lines east of Petersburg and between the Baxter Road and the Norfolk & Petersburg Railroad. The house, which had served as a headquarters and signal station, was demolished within a few weeks after Appomattox, very probably because of the extensive damage inflicted during the war. On two occasions, at least, the Avery house had been subjected to an unusually heavy shelling by Confederate batteries.<sup>18</sup>

The Taylor house at Spring Garden stood east of Petersburg on the Union lines near Fort Morton. It was the birthplace of George Keith Taylor, the celebrated Virginia Federalist leader and jurist, in 1769. The dwelling at Spring Garden is said to have been destroyed by fire in the American Revolution. At the outbreak of the Civil War, Spring Garden was the home of William Byrd Taylor, who lived there, except during 1864-1865, until his death in 1875. The house, together with the library of George Keith Taylor, was burned during the summer of 1864, but the exact date is not clear. After July 11, 1864, but not before, there are references to the house as the "ruin," or the "burnt house." On July 14 General Burnside, commanding the Ninth Union Army Corps, reported that the work on the battery at "the burnt house" was prosecuted every night. Then on July 26 he wrote, "Fourteen guns have been placed in the new battery near the burnt house." Burnside, it is certain, was referring to the Taylor house ruins. The 14-gun battery was the only one of its kind

on the Union lines and was his headquarters during the Battle of the Crater. In September 1864, the battery was designated as Fort Morton.

A new house was built at Spring Garden after the war, and the last of the family to live there was Richard Field Taylor, a bachelor, who told Massachusetts veteran John Billings in 1888 that a house located on the farm had been destroyed in "three different wars." The Civil War of course accounts for one, and his statement lends credence to the belief that the house was burned during the American Revolution, but Taylor's third war is inexplicable. After being in possession of the Taylor family for almost 150 years, Spring Garden was sold to Robert W. Travis in 1901. Richard F. Taylor moved to Amelia County, where he died in 1921.

In 1950, the postwar dwelling at Spring Garden was demolished with the exception of the brick foundation and central chimney, which were left standing. At an investigation of the site by the Region One historical architect on January 29, 1954, it was judged that the remains were from a house built in the first quarter of the 19th century. It was therefore assumed to be the remains of the Taylor house destroyed during the war. Twenty-seven years later, in June 1981, archeological investigations revealed the remains of the Taylor house at another site, a short distance northward, toward Fort Haskell. The standing ruins, previously interpreted as the Taylor house, are now believed to be the foundations and chimney of an outbuilding, possibly a kitchen quarters structure.<sup>19</sup>

Another landmark of the siege was the Shands house, which stood about a mile east of Spring Garden. The house is reputed to have been built in the style of an English country manor, on land granted by the crown to William Shands. At the time the Union army appeared east of Petersburg

in June 1864, the occupants of the house were Sally Rives Shands and her husband, Elijah Monroe Webb. Taking heed of a Union soldier's warning, the young couple fled, leaving just about everything behind. Later in 1864 the house, or site, was used as a headquarters by General Winfield S. Hancock, commanding the Union Second Army Corps. The date of its destruction is uncertain, but it had been destroyed by the end of the siege. A new dwelling was erected by the family on another site, and for many years their tract of land has been known as Hickory Hill.<sup>20</sup>

Still another house which failed to survive the war was the home of Otway P. Hare on his estate "New Market," which included Hare Hill where Fort Stedman was built in 1864. Nearby was the Newmarket Race Course, which in 1857 was claimed as one of the oldest in the United States. Hare's name was long associated with the Newmarket Race Course, and it was not uncommon for 19th century ladies to watch the races from their carriages on Hare's Hill. His dwelling, dating from the 18th century, was a 2-1/2 story frame structure with five gables placed directly above the five second floor windows. The house stood in a grove of oaks, with a nearby garden. There were two outbuildings, one of which was a stable. That the family had to depart in a hurry in 1864 and leave most of their possessions behind is evidenced in several accounts of the pillaging that went on after the army arrived. A soldier of the Sixth Maine Battery recalled:

...an elegant residence, formerly occupied by Mr. O. P. Hare, a southern gentleman of wealth, who was "not at home" when we arrived. The men, in their customary style of protecting secesh property, procured some very elegant horse-trappings and equipments from his establishment.... His furniture was sadly "demoralized," and some distributed along the works. Costly stuffed chairs, and sofas of plush and damask; and a fine rosewood piano, which a rebel-shell had "played upon," was made to do duty in a portion of the works we had thrown up across his garden.

From a Massachusetts soldier we have another account:

FUN IN THE HARE HOUSE. Many of the men occupied the Hare house. In the parlor was a piano which was played by the boys to the accompaniment of the music of cannon and musketry. Some donned women's clothing found in the closets and made merry, dancing a cotillion as shells tore through the roof and bullets broke glass in the windows. One boy was struck in the face by a minie ball while he sat in a rocking chair, just after he had said: "What do you think the folks at home would say to this?"

These and other sources attest to the damage done to the house during the fighting in June 1864. Further evidence of battle damage, as well as architectural details of the house, are shown in a pencil sketch of the Hare house by Alfred R. Waud in the summer of 1864. The house was much too close to the lines to be used as a headquarters, or for any other military function. Aside from its being pillaged, lumber and other materials were undoubtedly stripped from the house for uses elsewhere. Just when the house and its outbuildings disappeared is uncertain, but we have good evidence from a veteran of the 63rd Pennsylvania infantry that it was gone by the end of July 1864:

After dark (on the 29th) we moved into the trenches in front of the site of the Hare House, a locality not wholly unfamiliar to our division and memorable as the scene of our disastrous and unsuccessful charge of June 18th. The spot was, however, now scarcely recognizable, as the works had been considerably advanced and strengthened and all the former landmarks obliterated.

Hare resided in Petersburg after the war and never returned to live at "New Market." The site remained abandoned and in 1873 it was sold. No traces of the house remain above ground today, but archeological test excavations in 1978 revealed destruction rubble brick corner foundations, and a small portion of the cellar.<sup>21</sup>

Two houses of significance stood in the present Battery Five area of the park, the Friend house and the Jordan house. The Jordan house has been gone for many years, but Whitehill, or the Friend house as it came

to be called, stood until comparatively recent times. During the Revolutionary War, when British troops stopped there for a rest in April 1781, the site appears to have been the property of Colonel John Bannister of Battersea, his home which still stands in west Petersburg. Bannister in 1781 referred to his property as Whitehall, but it at an undetermined time evolved into Whitehill. Whitehall seems to have been the name used locally for the site, but during the Civil War it was referred to as the Friend house. It was the 18th century home of Charles Friend, who had inherited the farm of about 1,000 acres in the early 19th century from his father, Nathaniel Friend, a merchant, planter, and former mayor of Petersburg. The house, with two chimneys and dormers, was a white frame building with a wide hall and spacious rooms handsomely furnished. Charles Friend, a planter and writer for agricultural journals, enlisted April 20, 1861, as a private in the Prince George Cavalry, Prince George County, Virginia, at the age of 43.<sup>22</sup> His son, Benjamin, enlisted at the age of 16 in the Rockbridge Artillery. At the beginning of the war the family, with a few servants and some furnishings, went to live in Petersburg, and later refuged in North Carolina. After the capture of Battery Five on the Dimmock Line in June 1864, Whitehill became the headquarters of General William F. "Baldy" Smith, commander of the Eighteenth Army Corps, and a signal station was established on the roof of the house. Later, in March 1865, Whitehill was the headquarters of Major General Orlando B. Willcox, commanding the First Division, Ninth Army Corps.

Although the house had been spared, the Friend family scarcely recognized the place when they returned late in April 1865. All the outbuildings and fences were gone, and the yard was cut up with fortifications. The house, they found, had been stripped of its furnishings, which,

according to the servant, were sent North. All the windows and doors were gone, as well as the porches. The Friends in time leveled the earthworks in the yard and restored the house to something of its former beauty. Charles Friend died in 1871 and eventually, after 1900, the farm was sold. During World War I the property was acquired by the War Department, and the house was used as the headquarters of the Motor Transport Corps, 80th Division, stationed at Camp Lee. In 1923 the Friend house, which had close associations with three wars, was demolished. Years later, a writer for the Petersburg Progress-Index rated its destruction as "one of the most amazing pieces of stupidity of its kind on record here." The tract including the Friend house site was acquired by the park in 1939.<sup>23</sup>

The Jordan house stood about 700 feet north of the Friend house and on the property known as Clermont, which was acquired by Josiah Jordan about 1830. The two houses, Friend and Jordan, were identical, each having 16 rooms. They had been erected by the previous owners, two brothers, on adjoining hills and before Whitehill had been purchased by Nathaniel Friend. When the Jordan family returned to Clermont after the war, not a building was standing. There are two versions as to the fate of the house, one being that it was torn down for firewood, the other that it was pulled down and the materials used in the construction of buildings at City Point. The Jordans built another house on new foundations about 300 feet from the old, and about 1879 this house was burned. A third Jordan house was then built on the foundations of the original dwelling. After Josiah Jordan's death in 1886, Clermont was sold to Peter Batte. During World War I the property was acquired by the War Department, and about 1920 the third Jordan house was razed. When the property left the family, they retained rights to the burying ground where Josiah Jordan,

his wife, and four of their children are buried. Remains of the foundations of the first Jordan house are still to be seen, as is the burial ground, located a short distance east of the Visitor Center at Battery Five.<sup>24</sup>

The first major landmark to disappear on the lines south of Petersburg was Globe Tavern on the Petersburg & Weldon Railroad. Known also as Yellow Tavern or House, and as the Six-Mile House, the two-storied brick structure well within the area covered by the Battle of the Weldon Railroad in August 1864. Afterwards the building served as the headquarters of Warren's Fifth Army Corps, and later a station on the City Point & Army line was established at the site. Jarratt's Hotel guide, published in 1866, reveals that the building had been pulled down because of its cracked walls and dilapidated condition. Just when this was done is undetermined, but it was certainly before June 1865, when Orange Judd made his tour. It seems most unlikely that he would have failed to mention this landmark of the siege had the building been standing.<sup>25</sup>

A few miles west of Globe Tavern was Poplar Grove, the camp of the 50th New York Engineers. Poplar Grove National Cemetery was established on the site in the summer of 1866. As long as they stood during and after the war, the log church and other rustic buildings nearby, which were erected in February 1865, were regarded as one of the showplaces of the battlefield. Kennard visited the camp site in April 1865 and sketched the church, which Edward Moseley, his companion, declared "most elegant, with a handsome tower and spire, and gothic doors and windows." The officers' quarters, he wrote, "would do credit to any Swiss village."<sup>26</sup> Judd in June 1865 remarked that "Nowhere, in this country or in Europe, have I seen rustic work that would compare with what is to be seen in

this camp, and in the hospital camp a hundred rods or so north-west."<sup>27</sup>

Trowbridge, who visited Poplar Grove in September of that year, was also awed by what he saw and described the church as the gem of the place: "Its walls, pillars, pointed arches and spire, one hundred feet high, were composed entirely of pines selected and arranged with surprising taste and skill. The pulpit was in keeping with the rest." Trowbridge noted that above the pulpit was an inscription denoting the presentation of the church to members of the nearby Poplar Spring Church, which had been severely damaged during the fighting of September 29-October 1, 1864.<sup>28</sup> The extent of its use by the civilian congregation is not clear, but we do know that at this time there were other plans for the church. There was, in the summer of 1865, an effort to have the church removed for exhibition at Central Park in New York. The plan never materialized, however, and the buildings were allowed to fall into ruin. Some of them were no doubt cleared away in 1866, when the cemetery was laid out. The first indication of decay in the church was on September 30, 1867, when the superintendent of the cemetery reported that "to preserve the church, the Roof and Windows require repairing." In February 1868, he wrote that the church was fast decaying, the roof was leaking in several places, and the windows were broken. While authorities agreed the church should be preserved as a memento as long as practicable, no funds were available for its repair. Finally, sometime in April 1868, the church was razed. Apparently it was done before the Rev. David Macrae visited Poplar Grove the same year, for in Americans At Home he writes of his visit to the cemetery but makes no mention of the church.<sup>29</sup> But in March 1869, when Russell H. Conwell visited the site, he remarked, "The scorched timbers of Poplar Grove Church remind us forcibly of the

famous 'New York Carpenters.'" What Conwell probably saw, lying about, were the logs and other materials from the razed church.<sup>30</sup>

The 50th New York Engineers left another battlefield landmark destined to survive for only a few years. This was the signal tower on Peebles Farm completed in February 1865. It was demolished about 1867, and the materials went into the building of a dwelling that burned in 1885. Some of the early tourists including Orange Judd ascended the tower, which the Jarratt's Hotel guide book recommended for those who did not suffer from dizziness and had the energy to make the climb: "the view obtained from the top is very extensive and interesting, overlooking the entire field of operations of the two Armies that lay opposite to each other for so many months."<sup>31</sup>

#### The Crater

The tract of land upon which the Crater battlefield is located was William H. Griffith's farm before the war. His dwelling was located at the junction of the Jerusalem Plank Road (U.S. Route 301) and the Baxter Road, in the vicinity of where the Massachusetts monument now stands. Most of the farm had belonged to his wife, Rebecca B. Raines, and 35 acres had once been a part of the Taylor farm, Spring Garden. Griffith's house was burned in mid-June 1864 and after the war he built another, about 75 yards southwest of the Crater.<sup>32</sup>

Because of its spectacular story the Crater very soon became a major attraction on the battlefields. A sketch in Frank Leslie's Illustrated Weekly Newspaper, August 19, 1865, shows a number of the early visitors. Trowbridge visited the site on his tour in September 1865 and found in the "midst of weedy fields, the famous 'crater'--scene of one of the most fear-

ful tragedies of the war." He found the mouth of the mine tunnel, largely hidden by weeds, and noted that the mine tunnel was partly caved, and that the mouth of the Confederate countermine was still visible, a deep, dark, narrow cavern supported by framework in the lower side of the crater. Lying around, he observed, were rusted bayonets, canteens, and shell fragments and "all around were graves."<sup>33</sup>

Thanks to another early visitor, one of unknown identity, in 1867 we have a good account of the very early beginnings of the Crater as a tourist attraction, together with William H. Griffith's enterprise:

I found myself impelled towards the Crater, following out the Jerusalem Plank Road. Half a mile from Blandford, going nearly southward, a new road starts out east and a sign board pointed "To the Crater." Several hundred yards across the field, on the brow of the hill, yawned the Crater, looking black and uninviting.

About a year since, being in needy circumstances, Mr. Griffith, encouraged by the number of visitors, conceived the idea of preserving the crater intact, as the war had left it...; and with that view he enclosed it, and added some conveniences and attractions. Walks were laid out, and steps planted by which the mouth of the crater is reached. Several tenements were built--one, the "Crater Saloon" where visitors can refresh themselves; and the other a museum.... A small fee is expected but not demanded. <sup>34</sup>

From the Rev. David Macrae, the Scottish minister who came to Petersburg in 1868, we have another account which appeared in his The Americans At Home, published in 1871:

A booth had been erected beside it [the Crater] now, where relics of the fight were sold, and 25 cents charged for admission to the ground. The Major's [Giles B. Cooke] uniform, however, gave an official air to our visit, and we were charged nothing. There is still a vast hollow in the earth, though the look of the place has changed... in consequence of the falling in of the sides. Human bones were still lying about, and shreds of uniform and cartridge-pouches and bayonet scabbards, some of them scorched and curled up as with fire.<sup>35</sup>

Two register books, the first of which Griffith opened in 1867, reveal the signatures of quite a few well-known persons who visited the Crater. Former Confederate general officers are represented by James Longstreet,

Fitzhugh Lee, Henry Heth, Johnson Hagood, A. H. Colquitt, and E. P. Alexander. Union generals among the visitors included George Stoneman, Abner Doubleday, Rufus Ingalls, Emory Upton, and Simon G. Griffin, whose brigade participated in the Battle of the Crater. Notable historians and writers who signed the register were Miss Ida Tarbell, G. F. R. Henderson, John Codman Ropers, George Bancroft, Edward Everett Hale, and Thomas Nelson Page. Some feminine names of particular interest are those of Mrs. John A. Logan, whose visit to Petersburg inspired her husband General Logan, Commander of the Grand Army of the Republic, to initiate May 30 as a national Memorial Day; and Mrs. General Tom Thumb, diminutive wife of P. T. Barnum's most successful attraction.

After the death of William H. Griffith, the heirs of the estate in 1873 conveyed the farm to his son, Timothy Rives Griffith, who was a boy of twelve when the Battle of the Crater was fought. He continued the operation at the Crater and apparently took much interest in adding to the collection of battlefield artifacts which were kept in the small frame "relic house," which stood near the Crater until after World War I. A group of eleven specimens from the collection were selected as an illustration for Century Company's four-volume Battles and Leaders of the Civil War, published in 1888. Another illustration was what Griffith must have considered as the gem of his collection, the two bullets that met, point to point, at the Crater. Most if not all of these specimens, including the bullets, are presently featured in the museum at Petersburg National Battlefield.<sup>36</sup>

The Rev. David Macrae and Major Giles B. Cooke wiggled out of paying 25 cents to see the Crater in 1868, and in 1869, the journalist and veteran Russell J. Conwell apparently paid it without much complaint. He

did, however, seem to resent that the site, where so many lost their lives, had become "a show." But some 20 years later it was another matter with a South Carolina veteran, J. C. Hough, who had lost a brother in the war:

A hired man, perhaps a Yankee, stays around the Crater and pretends to know everything about it and charged me 25 cents for talking and telling me what I, to a great extent, knew. I told him on principle I refused to pay for it...a place I had helped to make historic by deeds of sacrifice.<sup>37</sup>

The Crater was a natural attraction for veterans, especially those who had participated in the war at Petersburg. An early gathering of Confederate veterans was on May 11, 1875, when about 35 survivors of Mahone's brigade arrived.<sup>38</sup> On October 18, 1883, a party from Lincoln Post No. 11, Grand Army of the Republic, Newark, New Jersey, toured the Crater battlefield on their visit to Petersburg, and two years later, on October 14, 1885, there came a group of Pennsylvania veterans, survivors of the 51st Regiment Pennsylvania Volunteer Infantry. At a joint reunion on May 3, 1887, about a hundred Union and Confederate veterans assembled in the Crater where they were photographed with General Mahone.<sup>39</sup> Other veterans' gatherings at the Crater followed, but the most memorable of them all was the reenactment of November 3, 1903. At that time the Crater Legion, about 430 survivors of Mahone's brigade, reenacted (at a slower pace) the charge they had made on the same ground 39 years before. It was on this momentous occasion that one of the many spectators, 17-year-old Douglas Southall Freeman, became inspired to write a history of the Army of Northern Virginia, and the ultimate result was his R. E. Lee and Lee's Lieutenants.<sup>40</sup>

Timothy R. Griffith died in 1903, and with the death of all his heirs by 1918, the Crater farm passed from the family. In 1925 it was acquired

by the Crater Battlefield Association, Inc., which erected a club house near the Crater, near where the postwar Griffith dwelling stood. The club house was a story-and-a-half frame structure, with three dormers. French doors on each side of the main entrance opened out onto the porch which extended across the front of the building.

On 1926, the Association constructed an 18-hole golf course. The project, according to their brochure, was done "with the approval of Confederate and Federal Societies...thus insuring the preservation of the property in its war-time state." The brochure further stated:

The corporation has at all times cooperated with local, state and national organizations interested in the establishment of a military park around Petersburg, and now regards itself as a trustee whose rights are subordinate to the plans of the government or people in preserving all the battlefields around Petersburg and Richmond.<sup>41</sup>

Another project was soon underway in 1926 with the reexcavation of a portion of the Union mine tunnel, parts of which were found intact. The undertaking was financed by the Association, and the work was supervised by Wilson S. Phillips who with his wife managed the club house and golf course. Some of the engineering work was done by Captain Carter R. Bishop. An entrance to the tunnel was constructed on the eastern edge of the Crater, floor boards were laid, and electric lighting was installed inside. A photograph of the tunnel's interior indicates that its height was greater than it was in 1864. The tunnel remained opened to the public for several years but was eventually closed when parts of it began to collapse.<sup>42</sup>

A large number of artifacts were found during the tunnel project and added to the museum, the nucleus of which was the old Griffith collection. Among the articles excavated were a box used in 1864 to remove the dirt from the tunnel and several ale bottles used as candle holders. A room

was allotted in the club house for a museum, but as late as circa 1929 some battlefield recoveries were still displayed in the small frame "relic house" erected by the Griffiths near the Crater. The structure appears on a post card view of about that date, but another view taken about 1932 shows it had disappeared by then.<sup>43</sup>

There were occasional negotiations during the early 1930s with the Association to acquire the Crater for the park, but all attempts to reach an agreement failed. Generally, most everyone at this time agreed that the Crater should be removed from the hands of a private corporation, but there was a divergence of opinion as to who should have control of it. The Sons of Confederate Veterans, or at least some of them, wanted to see their organization take over the Crater but, as a writer for the Richmond Times-Dispatch pointed out in 1932, that would result in the anomalous situation of a Federal battlefield park with its chief point of interest owned and maintained by a "Confederate organization." Others wanted to see the crater purchased and turned over to the state. The Crater Battlefield Association was more inclined to see the Crater included in the Federal park. The throes of the depression years began to close in on the Crater, and late in 1934 the Association became bankrupt and the Crater Golf Club was closed.<sup>44</sup>

#### Monuments, Memorials, and Markers

Within and around Petersburg National Battlefield, eleven monuments and memorials have been erected in commemoration of participants, and events during the Civil War; these, with their locations, dedication dates, and other data, are:

Confederate Soldier monument, Memorial Hill, Blandford Cemetery, June 9, 1890. Erected by the Ladies' Memorial Association.<sup>45</sup>

Confederate Memorial Arch, Blandford Cemetery, 1893. Erected by the Ladies' Memorial Association to replace the original 1884 arch which was blown down in a storm.<sup>46</sup>

First Maine Heavy Artillery monument, near Colquitt's Salient, September 30, 1895. Erected in memory of the 632 men who fell in the attack of June 18, 1864, by the survivors of the regiment.<sup>47</sup>

Colonel George W. Gowen statue, junction of U.S. Routes 301 and 301A, June 20, 1907. Erected by the survivors of the 48th Regiment Pennsylvania Volunteer Infantry and the school children and citizens of Schuylkill County, Pennsylvania; dedicated to the memory of Colonel Gowen and the other members of the regiment who were killed in battle during the war.<sup>48</sup>

Brigadier General Johnson Hagood's Brigade (South Carolina) Monument, on field of the Battle of the Weldon Railroad, August 18-21, 1864, at Fort Wadsworth, 1908. Erected by William Valmore Izlar and other survivors of the brigade.<sup>49</sup>

Third Division (Pennsylvania), Ninth Army Corps monument, on site of Fort Mahone, South Sycamore St., Petersburg, Va., May 19, 1909. Erected by the Commonwealth of Pennsylvania.<sup>50</sup>

Third Division (Pennsylvania), Ninth Army Corps monument, Fort Stedman, May 19, 1909. Erected by the Commonwealth of Pennsylvania and sons of Lieutenant Hugh Jones, Co. C, 209th Regiment Pennsylvania Infantry, who was killed at the Battle of Fort Stedman.<sup>51</sup>

Massachusetts monument, Crater battlefield, November 13, 1911. Erected by the Commonwealth of Massachusetts.<sup>52</sup>

Battalion Washington Artillery monument, Blandford Cemetery, 1912. Erected by the Washington Artillery of New Orleans in memory of the unit's members who were killed at Petersburg.<sup>53</sup>

Brigadier General Stephen Elliott's Brigade (South Carolina) monument, Crater battlefield, November 26, 1924. Erected by the South Carolina Division, United Daughters of the Confederacy.<sup>54</sup>

Major General William Mahone monument, Crater battlefield, July 30, 1927. Erected by the Petersburg Chapter, United Daughters of the Confederacy.<sup>55</sup>

The earliest markers found in the park are three stones placed on the Crater battlefield in 1905 to mark the advance position of the Second Regiment Pennsylvania Heavy Artillery (infantry) on July 30, 1864. In 1907, the survivors of the 48th Regiment Pennsylvania Volunteer Infantry unveiled a small marker at the entrance to the mine tunnel they had excavated

years before, and another marker at the Crater. A marker denoting the field over which Mahone's brigade charged July 30, 1864, was erected in November 1911 by the Petersburg Chapter, United Daughters of the Confederacy.<sup>56</sup>

In 1917, a memorial-marker was placed on the east side of Crater Road (U.S. Route 301) at the southern end of Brith Achim Cemetery. This granite marker denotes the site of the covered way through which Mahone's troops passed July 30, 1864, to reach the ravine from which they charged to recapture the lines at Elliott's Salient. Presented to the A. P. Hill Camp, Sons of Confederate Veterans, in memory of William R. McKenney (1851-1916), it replaced a wooden marker erected on the site by the A. P. Hill Camp, Confederate Veterans.

East of Fort Stedman, and near the Hospital Gate entrance (Route 109) to the Fort Lee U.S. Military Reservation, is a stone marker denoting the spring used by the 209th Regiment Pennsylvania Infantry during 1864-1865. It was placed there in October 1912 by Captain F. H. Barker, Ebensburg, Pennsylvania; Colonel Milton A. Embick, Carlisle, Pennsylvania; and Seward W. Jones, Boston, Massachusetts.<sup>57</sup>

About 1912, the A. P. Hill Camp, Sons of Confederate Veterans, began placing stone markers on the battlefields. A granite marker, believed to have been one of those put up by the Sons of Confederate Veterans, commemorates John W. (Jack) Hare, who in July 1864 as a member of Sturdivant's Battery shelled his home, which was being used by Union soldiers. This was the Hare dwelling at New Market, near where the Union army erected Fort Stedman. The marker was placed on or in the vicinity of the site occupied by Sturdivant's Battery, near where the Norfolk & Western Railroad bridge

now crosses the Hopewell Road (State Route 36). It is presently at the corner of a building occupied by an automobile dealer, on the south side of the road and east of the railroad bridge. No traces of earthworks remain in this commercially developed area, and the marker may well have been moved from its original location. Other markers known to have been erected by the Sons of Confederate Veterans are at Colquitt's Salient; Gracie's Salient; Battery 45 (Fort Lee), on the Boydton Plank Road, erected in 1914; Rohoic Dam (Lee's Dam), on Duypuy Road, erected in 1914; and Fort Gregg, on the Boydton Plank Road, erected in 1914. At the intersection of U.S. Route 1 and the Duncan Road, the Camp on April 16, 1912, erected a granite marker to designate the spot at or within 50 yards of which General A. P. Hill was killed on April 2, 1865. Some distance from this marker is another which reads "Where Hill Fell," intended, presumably, to denote the exact spot; it was erected by the A. P. Hill Camp, Sons of Confederate Veterans on April 16, 1912. Nearby, there is still another marker, erected by the state, to denote the field in which Hill was killed.<sup>58</sup>

Another series of markers appeared in 1952 and 1953, when the Quartermaster Technical Services selected the locations for seven markers at Fort Lee. Two of the markers, brass plaques set in concrete, denote the location of Meade's headquarters, and five designate places, including Meade's Station, where the City Point & Army Railroad crossed over the area covered by the present military reservation.<sup>59</sup>

A stone marker in Blandford Cemetery marks the location where the first Ninth of June Memorial Day exercises were held. It was erected before 1945, presumably by the Ladies' Memorial Association.<sup>60</sup>

The Tunnels and Fort Hell (Sedgwick)

The failure in the 1930s to acquire Fort Sedgwick and the nearby Confederate tunnels eventually resulted in their disappearance. The tunnels, or Confederate countermines, were discovered by accident in 1909. Located in front of the defenses at Rives Salient on the old Rives farm, and opposite Fort Sedgwick, the area was part of or was leased to the Gregory farm owned by A. L. Davis, who made the discovery. While ploughing the field one day, his mule fell into the hole, which upon further investigation revealed the tunnels. For years a fence surrounded the hole, and nothing was done about it. Eventually the property passed into the possession of David A. Lyon, Jr., and fell within an area called Pine Gardens, a real estate development. On September 2, 1925, Mr. Lyon opened the tunnels to the public with a dedication ceremony attended by Governor Elbert Lee Trinkle of Virginia. After 17 years of successful operation, the tunnels were condemned as unsafe for further visitation unless drastic measures were taken for the support of the roof. In 1943 the tunnels were closed, but parts of them were still intact late in 1959, when they were filled in by a building contractor.<sup>61</sup>

On July 4, 1932, Mr. Lyon opened Fort Sedgwick, which soon became better known by its wartime sobriquet, Fort Hell. A minimal fee was charged for admission to the fort and museum which contained artifacts excavated in the area. For almost 34 years the enterprise continued as a popular tourist attraction. Then by the end of January 1966, Fort Hell was sold to a commercial development, and in mid-June 1966 the fort and museum-gift shop was closed. Efforts to rescue the site failed and Fort Hell was soon leveled, the most deplorable loss to the Petersburg battlefields since the turn of the century.<sup>62</sup>

The Ninth of June Memorial Day at Petersburg

Closely associated with the story of the Petersburg battlefields is the annual observance of the Battle of June 9, 1864. A Petersburg school teacher, Miss Nora Fontaine Maury Davidson (1836-1929), originated the local Memorial Day on April 26, 1866, when she and her pupils decorated the Confederate graves in Blandford Cemetery. Soon afterwards, on May 6, 1866, the Ladies' Memorial Association was organized, and as one of their first objectives they undertook to see to an appropriate observance of the Battle of June 9, 1864, and the decoration of the graves as Miss Davidson had done. The story of the Ninth of June would be recounted many times in the exercises after the first one on June 9, 1866. Ever since then, except for one year, the rites have been held in commemoration of the battle. The exception was May 30, 1888, when the Ladies' Memorial Association complied with Governor Fitzhugh Lee's request to observe May 30 in conformity with some of the other organizations in the state. The A. P. Hill Camp, Confederate Veterans, announced its disapproval to the Ladies' Memorial Association, and thereafter the Ninth of June was observed.<sup>63</sup>

Miss Davidson's act of decorating the graves of the Confederate soldiers was not only perpetuated as an annual occasion for Petersburg, but served as an inspiration for the establishment of a nationwide Memorial Day. Mrs. John A. Logan saw the faded flags and withered flowers on the graves at Petersburg in 1868, presumably on April 9, when she visited the Crater. Deeply moved, Mrs. Logan related what she had seen to her husband, General Logan, who was Commander of the Grand Army of the Republic. The General was much impressed with what his wife had told him, and on May 5, 1868, he issued an order designating May 30 as the annual date for

decorating the graves of Union soldiers, sailors, and marines.<sup>64</sup>

The Ninth of June ceremonies took place on Memorial Hill, the soldiers' section of Blandford Cemetery, until 1942. Since then they have been held at Blandford Church, which in 1901 was entrusted to the Ladies' Memorial Association. The church, built in 1735, had long been in a state of poor repair, but the Association restored it as a memorial chapel with Tiffany windows and commemorative tablets.<sup>65</sup>

## Chapter Four

### Efforts to Establish a Park at Petersburg, 1898-1925

Senator John W. Daniel of Virginia is said to have proposed legislation about 1888 which would have provided for the establishment of a park at Petersburg, but if he did the Senator never introduced it into Congress. Although Federal funds had been appropriated in the past for monuments at battlefields of the American Revolution and a scenic natural park, Yellowstone, had been created, Congress was not quite ready to accept the idea of establishing national battlefield parks. National cemeteries, however, were another matter, as evidenced by the early establishment of cemeteries at Gettysburg, Fort Donelson, Fredericksburg, Petersburg, City Point, and other sites.<sup>1</sup>

But public interest in battlefield parks was mounting, and at some battlefields, veterans' groups were already laying out parks. Joint reunions among Union and Confederate veterans were increasing in the 1880s, and in general the feeling of animosity was dying out among the aging ex-soldiers and the public as well. The battlefield park at Chickamauga and Chattanooga was authorized in 1890, that at Shiloh in 1894, and that at Gettysburg in 1895.

#### Petersburg National Battlefield Park Association

Although there were many individuals who wanted to see the establishment of a park at Petersburg, the first concerted and serious effort was made in 1898, when the Petersburg National Battlefield Association was organized with Stith Bolling as its president. Bolling was a captain in the cavalry during the war and had been acting assistant adjutant general on the staff of Major General William Henry Fitzhugh Lee. In 1869 he was elected to the

Virginia House of Delegates, where he served for two years. Since 1870 he had been postmaster of Petersburg, and was active in local civic and veterans' affairs.<sup>2</sup>

The Association was an outgrowth of a move by local groups to support the Epes bill then before Congress. This bill introduced on January 6, 1898, by Representative Sydney P. Epes, Fourth Congressional District of Virginia, proposed the establishment of a park at Petersburg to be called the Petersburg National Park.<sup>3</sup> By its provisions, the public roads of Dinwiddie and Prince George counties within the battlefield area were to be ceded to the Federal Government by the state, and the lands upon which the earthworks stood were to be acquired by condemnation proceedings as provided for in the Act of August 1, 1868, entitled "An Act to authorize condemnation of land for sites of public buildings and for other purposes." The park commission was empowered to exclude land on which no military operations of special importance or interest had occurred. Agreements could be made with residents on condemned property if they desired to stay on and cultivate the land. They could do so if they agreed to preserve the existing buildings, roads, and the outline of fields and woods, and assist in caring for and protecting any markers and monuments that might be put up on the property. The bill provided for a commission of three to be in charge of the park. Each member must have actively participated in one of the battles at Petersburg. Two of the commissioners were to be appointed from civil life by the Secretary of War, and the other was to be an army officer well acquainted with the details of the battles at Petersburg. The commissioners were to have an office in the War Department building in Washington, and while on active duty they would be paid from the appropriation provided for in the bill, which asked for \$125,000.<sup>4</sup>

The Petersburg Daily Index-Appeal of January 14, 1898, lauded the active support of the people of Fredericksburg in the establishment of a park there and urged the Petersburg Common Council and other organizations to support the Epes bill. On February 18, 1898, delegates from the Common Council, Chamber of Commerce, and the George J. Thomas Post, Grand Army of the Republic, of Petersburg met in the hall of the A. P. Hill Camp, Confederate Veterans, to take positive steps toward the support of the Epes legislation. The A. P. Hill Camp abstained because it had just recently passed a set of resolutions endorsing the bill. At this meeting of February 18, it was decided not to send a subcommittee to Washington as originally planned, but to inaugurate a move to organize a battlefield park association. George S. Bernard of the A. P. Hill Camp spoke of the advantages of a park to the city, and Bolling stated that parks were being established elsewhere and that he would like to have some of the money spent at Petersburg. "It seems to me that we have got to start and make no mistakes," Bolling insisted.<sup>5</sup>

At a meeting of the subcommittee on organization in March 1898, it was decided to name the association the Petersburg National Battlefield Association.<sup>6</sup> The following month a committee was appointed to determine which positions of the battlefield area should be embraced in the park. Bernard, at a meeting of the Association in April, read an address which had been prepared to sell the people of Petersburg and the neighboring counties on the idea of a park. "That the park will make the city of Petersburg and the portions of the counties of Prince George and Dinwiddie that will be embraced within its limits a source of attraction to the great benefit of their people, cannot be questioned," he said.<sup>7</sup>

Meanwhile, the Epes bill was with the House Committee on Military Affairs when the Maine blew up in Havana harbor. The declaration of war against Spain

on April 25, 1898, may have been the reason why the bill was never given a hearing. It died in committee when the 55th Congress adjourned on March 3, 1899.

On January 25, 1900, Congressman Epes introduced another bill for the establishment of a park at Petersburg, to be called the Petersburg National Battlefield Park. This bill was remarkably different from the previous one. The most striking difference was that the area to be declared a national park was confined to the battlefields east of Petersburg, from the Appomattox River southward to the Jerusalem Plank Road (U.S. Route 301); in all, about 3,040 acres. No mention was made of the inclusion of any of the battlefields south of the city. Another significant change was that this bill specified that land acquisition was to be by purchase, gift, or condemnation. There were to be three commissioners, and here too are some interesting changes. One of the commissioners, the chairman, was to be a Union veteran who had served at some time during the siege of Petersburg; one was to be an officer of the present Regular Army of the United States; and the third was to be a veteran of the Army of Northern Virginia and a resident of Petersburg. The commissioners were to have an office in the War Department building, if the Secretary of War thought it necessary, and an office in Petersburg.<sup>8</sup> This bill, like Epes' first, died in committee at the end of the 56th Congress in 1901.

Congressman Epes died in Washington on March 3, 1900, and on December 2, 1901, his successor, Francis R. Lassiter of Petersburg, reintroduced the Epes bill for the park, word for word.<sup>9</sup> The bill was referred to the Committee on Military Affairs, and there it stayed. In Petersburg during July 1902, while the bill was pending, a meeting of citizens was held at the YMCA in the interest of the park legislation. Former governor and Confederate veteran William E. Cameron of Petersburg made a brief address, but whatever they

did at the meeting was not enough, and this bill like the others died in committee. How long the Petersburg National Battlefield Park Association continued to exist is uncertain, but it is believed to have become dormant with its organization as of September 1899, with General Bolling as its president; Dr. John Herbert Claiborne, first vice-president; Charles Trotter Lassiter, second vice-president; James T. Rahily, secretary; W. F. Spotswood, Jr., treasurer; and a board of directors consisting of General Bolling, Charles C. Alley, W. E. Harwood, R. P. Barham, F. F. Lassiter, Hugh R. Smith, George S. Bernard, Robert Cabaniss, J. M. Quicke, Jr., and Simon Seward.<sup>10</sup>

Another attempt to get a park started was a joint resolution presented February 21, 1906, in the House of Representatives by Robert G. Southall, Fourth Congressional District of Virginia, which provided for the appointment of a commission to visit Petersburg and determine the advisability of establishing a park. The commission, to be appointed by the President, was to consist of an officer of the Corps of Engineers, United States Army, an enlisted veteran of the Union Army, and an enlisted veteran of the Confederate army. The resolution went to the Committee on Military Affairs, which on March 21, 1906, returned it to the House with a minor amendment. It was then referred to the House Calendar, and there it died.<sup>11</sup> The same joint resolution was presented to the Senate on March 27, 1906, by George Peabody Wetmore of Rhode Island.<sup>12</sup> It passed that body on June 28, and on the next day it went to the House, where it was referred to the Committee on Military Affairs and got no further.<sup>13</sup>

The move to establish a park was still very much alive the next year, and on May 3, 1907, the Petersburg Daily Index-Appeal told its readers: "While it is true that in a larger sense the proposed park is not a local matter, the country naturally expects the people of Petersburg to take the initiative

in such an undertaking, and it is clearly their interest and their duty to do so." The need for a park was again brought to the attention of its readers by that newspaper in June 1907, on the occasion of the dedication of the Pennsylvania monument: "Petersburg could have a battlefield park without a rival in the world, and would attract thousands."<sup>14</sup>

At a meeting of the Petersburg Chamber of Commerce Board of Governors in April 1907, Charles Hall Davis, chairman of the Chamber of Commerce Battlefield Park Committee, proposed a reenactment of the Battle of the Crater staged with the full cooperation and support of the A. P. Hill Camp, Confederate Veterans, which was obtained with little difficulty.<sup>15</sup> The reenactment was designed as a means to an end--the end being the establishment of a battlefield park. It was thought that the dramatic presentation would promote favorable public sentiment toward the park. The Daily Index-Appeal agreed that a more opportune moment for this proposal could not have occurred, "... when the eyes of the whole country were directed towards Virginia." The reenactment would be staged at a time when the Jamestown Exposition would be at its height, and it was expected that such an event here would attract a great number of people to the city.<sup>16</sup>

The Petersburg City Council was asked to appropriate \$5,000 to assist in financing the program, which in effect would be an appropriation to aid in the establishment of a battlefield park. When the question of the legality of such an appropriation came up, the councilmen referred the matter to the city finance committee. After some delay, the city attorney gave his opinion on May 7 that the appropriation for such a financial venture would be illegal; however, the city could buy the Crater farm and make a park of it. Charles Hall Davis at a meeting of the council expressed his disappointment, but hoped that the Crater farm would be purchased as a stepping stone to a national

battlefield park.<sup>17</sup> Meanwhile, the scheme for the reenactment of the Battle of the Crater was reaching such a scale of grandeur that it was feared by some that the magnitude of the whole thing would endanger its success, and the eventual development of a park. By May 19, 1907, the idea of a sham battle at the Crater was squelched because of growing disagreement that the reenactment would actually be a means to the desired end.<sup>18</sup>

The news of the move toward a park had reached an interested Union veteran who had fought at Petersburg, James Anderson of Springfield, Massachusetts. Revered in Petersburg, where many knew him as "Colonel Jim," he was an honorary member of the A. P. Hill Camp, Confederate Veterans, and every year since 1896 he had come down to observe R. E. Lee's birthday with the Confederate veterans.<sup>19</sup> In a letter to the Petersburg Daily Index-Appeal, Colonel Anderson suggested that the A. P. Hill Camp send a delegation to the Grand Army of the Republic Encampment and request their influence in getting a park. Most people of the south wanted this battlefield park, but most people in the North, Anderson believed, thought the park idea a move by the Grand Army of the Republic to commemorate the defeat of the Confederacy and were loath to approve for fear of offending Southerners.<sup>20</sup> This may have had some bearing on the next legislation for a park which was initiated by a Union veteran. On January 16, 1908, Senator Nathan B. Scott of West Virginia, who had served as a sergeant in the 88th Regiment Ohio Volunteer Infantry, introduced a joint resolution which provided for an examination of the Petersburg battlefields to determine the advisability of establishing a park. Actually, it was the same joint resolution submitted in 1906, verbatim. And it was no more successful than the previous endeavor.<sup>21</sup> Legislation of a new kind, which was probably considered as a practical step toward the establishment of a park, was presented by Congressman Lassiter on December 12, 1907. This was in the form of a concurrent resolution calling

for a survey and mapping of the lines of investment and defense around Petersburg. The survey was to include the location of division and corps headquarters and artillery positions for both armies. It would also ascertain the boundaries, acreage, and fee simple ownership of plots of land between the lines of both armies and lying within 500 yards on either side. Lassiter's resolution was reported by the Committee of Military Affairs drastically amended, reduced to just directing a study of the lines of investment and defense and surveys that would show plainly the positions of the armies, the headquarters of divisions and corps, and artillery positions. Michler's 1867 map of the battlefield area was sufficient to work with, the War Department believed. The cost of surveying the tracts of land and the research of records would make an appropriation of at least \$5,000 necessary, and an amendment appropriating that amount was needed to make the resolution effective.<sup>22</sup>

On March 22, 1909, Lassiter resubmitted the resolution, drawn up in agreement with the recommendations of the War Department.<sup>23</sup> It did not provide for any appropriation for extensive surveys as it was thought that, with the good maps of the area already at hand, funds for the few incidental surveys needed could be had from funds already under control of the War Department. Lassiter advised General William Wallace Wotherspoon, Assistant Chief of Staff, United States Army, that following a conference with officers who are in Petersburg in May 1909, he was of the opinion that action was not necessary as provided for in the resolution, which had failed to be adopted, as the Secretary of War could authorize an officer of the War College to make a special study of the operations around Petersburg, 1864-1865, as part of the regular course. Wotherspoon agreed with Lassiter that the War Department could prepare these studies, at least up to a certain point.<sup>24</sup>

Gettysburg to Petersburg Memorial Road Plan

While Congressman Lassiter was trying to get his resolution through, Charles Hall Davis in Petersburg was giving his attention to the establishment of a park such as had been set up at Gettysburg and Antietam. Lassiter also tried to interest members of Congress in the park but made little headway as everyone seemed to be absorbed with the tariff question. Davis' idea for the park featured an elaborate plan for building a memorial road from Gettysburg to Petersburg, which was actually another means of later establishing a park at Petersburg with tracts of land. This was at the time of the good roads movement in Virginia, and it was believed that public sentiment would be much in favor of a good road. In June 1909, Davis received a letter from Lassiter saying that a member of the Committee on Military Affairs believed the road project would be more difficult to pass than legislation for a park, and the Speaker of the House and other leaders were as opposed to making an appropriation for roads as they were to the establishment of battlefield parks.

Davis, in the meanwhile, has submitted his plan for the memorial road to several individuals for their comments and suggestions. Major Isaac B. Brown of the Petersburg Battlefield Commission was afraid, at the outset, that such a road would postpone to an even more indefinite time the establishment of a park at Petersburg, which was his primary interest. He did, however, believe the road plan had many commendable features. Another opinion solicited was that of Colonel Archibald Gracie, realtor, historian, and writer. He was also a man of some influence in diplomatic and legislative circles in Washington, where he was living in retirement. Colonel Gracie thought the plan for a road was an excellent one and suggested that there be formed a "Gettysburg to Petersburg Memorial Road Association," which would promote the plan. But to get anything through Congress, Gracie saw, there "must be business attached to it";

thus the practical utility of the memorial road should be emphasized. Both Major Brown and Gracie made it clear that if it came to a choice between a park and a memorial road, they were for a park.<sup>25</sup> The plan never received much publicity, however, and was soon abandoned.

Colonel Gracie would probably have approved of anything that would lead to the establishment of a park at Petersburg. He was a diligent promoter of the project, and his efforts had included the transmission of printed petitions for a Petersburg park to veterans' organizations and others soliciting their support.<sup>26</sup> Perhaps the underlying motive for his enthusiasm was due at least in part to the fact that his father, Brigadier General Archibald Gracie, Jr., was killed at Petersburg December 2, 1864. In the late 1890s Gracie came to Petersburg and visited the various sites associated with his father. After his retirement he set out to prepare a biography of General Gracie, but his interests became diverted, and The Truth About Chickamauga appeared in 1912, shortly before he sailed for a research trip abroad. He booked his return passage on the Titanic and was one of the last to be saved, but on December 4, 1912, he died of causes resulting from the shock of his experience.<sup>27</sup>

For quite a while after the death of Congressman Lassiter on October 9, 1909, there was little about a park in the press, but the Petersburg Index-Appeal of February 11, 1911, contended that the movement he began was still alive. The Petersburg Common Council's park committee, which had existed for several years, was all but forgotten, but Councilman O. W. Mattox intended to see it revived; and in view of the monument about to be erected by the Commonwealth of Massachusetts on the Crater battlefield, the Index-Appeal advised its readers:

The monuments erected and being erected on the battlefield are steps toward the consummation of a national park program. As each monument is placed the interest of the state erecting it becomes permanent and the representatives of these states will undoubtedly favor the entire tract of land being acquired by the government for park purposes, guaranteeing national supervision and caretaking.

#### A Memorial Boulevard at Petersburg

About 1910, Patrick H. Drewry, member of the Virginia House of Delegates, undertook a study of the various attempts which had been made to establish a park at Petersburg.<sup>28</sup> The plan for the park as envisioned by the A. P. Hill Camp, Confederate Veterans, and other interested groups was a rather extensive tract of land which ran roughly from the Appomattox River east of Petersburg south to the vicinity of Fort Sedgwick on the old Jerusalem Plank Road. Drewry was convinced that the amount of money that would be required to purchase the land in fee simple, and to convert it into a park, would be so great that the bill would never pass Congress. He proposed to Congressman Walter A. Watson, Lassiter's successor in 1913, that a bill be introduced providing for a Federal appropriation to construct a memorial boulevard from the Appomattox River east of Petersburg to the river west of the city. The road, according to Drewry's proposal, would run between the fortifications of the Union and Confederate armies. The City of Petersburg would form an organization to secure the titles to the property that would be involved, including the remains of the earthworks. Congressman Watson was in accord with this plan and agreed that it was feasible, but he wished at the same time to carry out the proposal of the A. P. Hill Camp, Confederate Veterans, that the desired tracts of land be purchased in their entirety and not in strips.

Drewry continued to act on behalf of his plan for the road and in early 1913 published a detailed account of it in the Petersburg Index-Appeal. The

plan was heartily endorsed by the Petersburg Chapter, United Daughters of the Confederacy, and the Sons of Confederate Veterans. The latter organization took the initiative and asked all patriotic organizations in Petersburg to send two representatives so that a group could be formed for the purpose of promoting the boulevard plan. An organization was formed after a meeting in Drewry's office, but it was short-lived. At the request of Drewry, the United Daughters of the Confederacy took up the plan for promoting the road where the Sons of Confederate Veterans left off. Their usual zeal and untiring efforts kept the memorial road plan alive until it appeared certain that a park consisting of tracts of land, rather than the road plan, would be the idea followed.

#### Crater Battlefield Park

In 1913 the heirs of Timothy Griffith, who died in 1903, were considering moving from the Crater farm and offered it for sale. Veterans in Massachusetts and Pennsylvania were interested in seeing the battlefield preserved as a park, and this appeared to be the opportune time for such a move. The Commonwealth of Massachusetts in 1911 erected a monument on the battlefield, where some years before Pennsylvania veterans had placed a number of granite markers. Virginians too were sympathetic to the Crater battlefield idea, and on February 26, 1914, bills providing for an inquiry by the War Department into the advisability and feasibility of the acquisition of the battlefield by the Federal Government were introduced into both the Senate and House. The Senate bill, introduced by Claude A. Swanson of Virginia, was sent to the Senate Committee on Military Affairs, where it died.<sup>29</sup> The House bill, presented by William A. Watson, Fourth Congressional District of Virginia, went to the House Committee on Military Affairs, which reported it on June 2 with an amendment reducing the text and with a recommendation that the Crater

battlefield be purchased if it could be done for a reasonable sum. A debate followed when the bill reached the House floor on September 1, 1914. So many battlefield bills were being brought up, James R. Mann of Illinois contended, that once the Government bought one, it would be difficult to find a stopping point. Mann, after some discussion with members sympathetic to the battlefield idea, was able to prevent the bill from passing unanimously. When the bill came up again on January 4, 1915, it was postponed to be taken up later, and in that status it forever remained.<sup>30</sup> The Griffith family did not sell the Crater farm until after 1918, and finally in 1936 the property was purchased by the Federal Government. There were no doubt many who saw the failure to acquire the Crater in 1914 as a lost opportunity to obtain a stepping stone toward a park covering a much greater area of the Petersburg battlefields.

#### Origin of Congressman Drewry's Bill

In 1923 Captain Carter R. Bishop of the A. P. Hill Camp, Confederate Veterans, advised Congressman Drewry, who had in 1919 succeeded Walter A. Watson as Representative of the Fourth Congressional District, of another plan for establishing a park.<sup>31</sup> Captain Bishop had discussed the matter at great length with James Anderson of Massachusetts, a staunch supporter for a park at Petersburg. Both had decided that the best thing to do in the way of a preliminary movement was to have the desired tracts of land surveyed, so as to present more accurate figures in acreage and costs in the proposed bill for the park. Colonel Anderson appeared confident that the Speaker of the House, Frederick H. Gillett of Massachusetts, would agree to introduce the bill. As the Republicans were in control of the organization of the House of Representatives, Drewry, a Democrat, thought the bill for the park would

carry more weight if presented by Gillett. When Congress convened in 1924, he conferred with Gillett on the proposed bill and just how it should be handled.

The bill, which would go before the Committee on Military Affairs, was first sent to the War Department for review and suggestions. The Secretary of War reported that while he had no objection to the specific bill, he was not in sympathy with the creation of any more battlefield parks. In February 1924, Drewry was much concerned that some recent publicity on the proposed bill might mislead the public into believing that the bill actually established a park. He summed up the situation as follows:

We are a long ways away from the establishment of a memorial road by the Federal Government, and the bill which is now under discussion, provides only for a survey of a route, and does not mean that Congress will pass a bill authorizing the building of the road. These things move slowly, and it will be years before we reach any such point; and it will take a great deal of good hard work on the part of all of us to get it accomplished.<sup>32</sup>

Although in 1924 it seemed that the park at Petersburg would take the form of a memorial road as conceived by Drewry, the plan consisting of tracts of land and a system of roadways as originally planned by others, chiefly the A. P. Hill Camp, had not been entirely abandoned. It should be pointed out that Congressman Drewry was not just for his own road plan, but he thought of it as the one that would have the greatest appeal to Congress.

Captain Bishop, who shared with many the belief that the South alone could not secure the park, undertook to gain the support of influential Northerners. He obtained the backing of the Governor of Pennsylvania as well as that of Senator James W. Wadsworth of New York. What might have been a factor in getting the support of the latter was that the Senator's father, Major General James W. Wadsworth, was mortally wounded at The Wilderness, and the star-shaped fort constructed by Union forces on the Weldon Railroad in 1864 had been named for him. Captain Bishop's untiring efforts to

secure the support of influential people played no small part in the success of the bill which established the Petersburg National Military Park.<sup>33</sup>

## Chapter Five

### Establishment of the Petersburg National Military Park

Congressman Drewry's bill submitted on April 29, 1924, was finally passed on February 11, 1925. It provided for the appointment of a commission by the Secretary of War to study the feasibility of preserving and marking the battlefields at Petersburg for historical and professional military study. The commission, which was to submit its report by December 1, 1925, was to consist of a commissioned officer of the Corps of Engineers, United States Army; a Union veteran; and a Confederate veteran. As far as practicable, the commissioners were to be persons familiar with the terrain of the Petersburg battlefields and the events of the siege. An appropriation of \$3,000 was made to carry out the provisions of the act.<sup>1</sup>

On March 11, 1925, the commission was named by the Secretary of War. Lieutenant Colonel Francis A. Pope, a West Point graduate and an engineer officer of 23 years experience, was appointed as a member, secretary, and disbursing officer of the commission. At the time, Colonel Pope was on duty with the Corps of Engineers at Norfolk, Virginia.<sup>2</sup>

James Anderson of Springfield, Massachusetts, was appointed on March 14, 1925, as the Union veteran on the commission. Widely known as "Colonel Jim," the title was honorary, and its origin appears to have been unknown either in Springfield or Petersburg. His father sympathized with the South, and to join the army, he ran away and enlisted at the age of 15 as a private in the 31st Maine Infantry, which at Petersburg was in Potter's Division, Ninth Army Corps. Anderson was on duty at Fort Fisher and was later transferred to Fort Davis. On April 2, 1865, he participated in the Ninth Corps' final assault on the Confederate defenses. He returned to the Petersburg

battlefield in 1892, and on another visit in 1898 he was invited by the A. P. Hill Camp, Confederate Veterans to attend the ceremonial return by the state of Michigan of the flag removed from the Petersburg courthouse April 3, 1865, by the First Michigan Sharpshooters. Anderson's amicability led to his adoption as an honorary member of the A. P. Hill Camp, and from then on, "Colonel Jim" was a frequent visitor to the city, where he enjoyed immense popularity among the citizens as well as the veterans.<sup>3</sup>

Carter R. Bishop, Anderson's good friend and a civil engineer by profession, was appointed as the Confederate veteran. Like Anderson's, Captain Bishop's rank was honorific. He had only served about three days on active duty as a V. M. I. cadet in the trenches at Richmond, but Captain Bishop never made any pretensions about his war service and was accepted as a veteran by the A. P. Hill Camp. He had a profound interest in the preservation and marking of the Petersburg battlefields and freely gave his time to the establishment of the park.

One April 18, 1925, the commission met at the City Hall in Petersburg with all members present and elected Colonel Anderson as chairman. Several meetings were subsequently held, and inspections of the areas desired for inclusion in the park were conducted. The commission's report, dated November 19, 1925, and submitted to the Secretary of War, recommended a hard surfaced road along the lines of both armies, with the acquisition of land which would include Union Forts Stedman, Haskell, Rice, Sedgwick, Davis, Wadsworth, and Fisher; and Confederate Forts Walker and Gregg, Battery Pegram, and the Crater. The approximate total area of the park would be 185 acres, and the total length of the road 21 miles. The estimated cost of the land to be acquired was \$45,750, a figure based on what might reasonably be expected from condemnation proceedings

or by agreement if the Government was required to pay full value for the land. The commission believed that the state and city governments would donate land, and that most land owners would probably give land for the park. Including surveying, laying of the roadways, monuments, and tablets, and the planting of trees and shrubs, the estimated cost of park development was \$1,035,000. In addition, the cost of annual maintenance of the park was estimated at \$10,000.<sup>4</sup>

Drewry's bill for the establishment of the park was submitted January 16, 1926, to the House of Representatives. It met with no difficulty at the hearings held before the House Committee on Military Affairs February 8, 1926, during which Drewry led a discussion on the significance of the siege of Petersburg, the educational value of a park, proposed roadways, and the acquisition of land. After passing the House, the bill was presented to the Senate by Senator James W. Wadsworth. It passed the Senate, and on July 2 it was sent to the President. On July 3, 1926, President Calvin Coolidge signed the bill authorizing the Petersburg park. Almost 30 years had passed since the Petersburg Battlefield Association had been organized to support Epes' bill for a park in 1898.<sup>5</sup>

Tucked away in the Congressional Record is a fine tribute to Colonel Anderson. Congressman Drewry on February 2, 1926, amended a bill which compensated Bishop and Anderson for expenses incurred while they were carrying out their duties as commissioners. Drewry, in his remarks before the House, spoke of James Anderson's long association with Petersburg, his dedication to his work as a commissioner, and said that "Colonel Jim" had done more to heal the wounds of the war than any man alive. Drewry's attestation, in part, read:

He lies now on a bed of sickness in a hospital in his native city, and I felt that I wanted, as a spokesman of the people of Petersburg, to lay on the pages of this journal a tribute to this soldier of the Federal Army,

who has done all that lay within his power to bring about a united country. After all, gentlemen, I know of no higher praise that can be awarded a man than to say that for 30 years he labored to promote the harmonious union of his country.<sup>6</sup>

In February 1926, while the bill for the establishment of the park was pending, Captain Bishop was busy conducting surveys of the contemplated park. By the middle of the month he had completed twelve plats of the battlefield area east of Petersburg, and work on the other sections was expected to begin the same month. The survey embraced an area extending from the fortifications on Appomattox River east of Petersburg south to the old Jerusalem Plank Road (U. S. Route 301), including Fort Rice and the Confederate tunnels at Rives Salient. Included in the survey was a road encircling Fort Rice and extending westward through the Walnut Hill section of Petersburg to the Johnson Road in Lee Memorial Park. Unfortunately, the development of this area as a part of the park was never fully realized, and the tunnels and fortifications which once existed there are now but a memory.<sup>7</sup>

On April 19, 1926, Colonel Anderson died suddenly at his home in Springfield. He had undergone an operation in January and apparently recovered, but he suffered a relapse a few days before his death. Resolutions of regret were adopted by the Petersburg City Council and the A. P. Hill Camp, but the most impressive tribute was in having the Camp's Confederate battleflag flown at half-mast from the City Hall. It was the same flag used to mourn the loss of Jefferson Davis and Generals Lee, Gordon, and Mahone, and this was the first time it had been used to honor a Union soldier. At the hour of his interment, a bugler on the steps of the City Hall sounded "Lights Out" as Petersburg's final salute to "Colonel Jim."<sup>8</sup>

A mass meeting of Petersburg citizens was held at the high school on Washington Street on the night of October 5, 1926, to raise funds for the

establishment of the park. G. Cleveland Wright of the Petersburg Battlefield Park Association, organized earlier in the year, explained the work of his organization and its need for money to cover such expenses as surveying and having plats made. Over \$1,400 was subscribed to the fund, and Captain Bishop offered \$100 worth of work in his capacity as a land surveyor, in honor of four of his friends including the late Colonel Anderson, with whom he had worked in getting the park started. The principal speaker at the meeting was Dr. Douglas S. Freeman, whose reputation as a historian and speaker no doubt contributed much to the large attendance at the meeting and the success in raising funds. More contributions were forthcoming, and by October 9, a total of \$1,890 had been raised.<sup>9</sup>

#### Petersburg Battlefield Park Association

Early in 1926, while Congressman Drewry's bill was pending, the Petersburg Battlefield Park Association was organized with Walter T. Baugh as its president to assist in the passage of the bill. On August 23, 1926, after the act authorizing the park had been signed by the President, the Association met to formulate plans for their objective, which was to aid in the acquisition of needed land, and to superintend its transfer to the Federal Government. Baugh resigned as president that year, and at a meeting of a special committee to select his successor, Franklin W. Smith, a widely known florist, was elected to fill the vacancy, which he did for the rest of his life.<sup>10</sup> General Homer T. Atkinson, commanding the Virginia Division, United Confederate Veterans, was elected honorary president.<sup>11</sup> The other officers were Dr. L. D. Early, a member of the A. P. Hill Camp, Sons of Confederate Veterans, vice president; Dan S. Hollenga, secretary; and Mrs. Edith Bolling Cameron, member of the Petersburg Chapter, United Daughters of the Confederacy, treasurer. At the head of the

Association's committees were G. Cleveland Wright, Finance; Congressman Drewry, Acquirement; and Miss Anne V. Mann, newspaper columnist and pillar of the United Daughters of the Confederacy, who headed the Publicity Committee.<sup>12</sup>

## Chapter Six

### Petersburg National Military Park Under the War Department

Civil War national military parks were under the control of the War Department in 1926, when the park at Petersburg was authorized. Each of these parks was originally administered by a commission of three, who were responsible directly to the Secretary of War. At first the commissions consisted of three veterans, two Union and one Confederate, all participants in the battle which had occurred at their respective parks. But as time passed and the veterans aged, this pattern became difficult to observe, and by the 1920's park commissions were usually composed of an army officer on active duty status and two veterans, one Union and one Confederate. A Confederate and a Union veteran were appointed to the Petersburg commission in 1928, although the act establishing the park did not specify the appointment of Civil War veterans. Time would also eventually run out on this composition, as in the case of Petersburg, where the Union veteran resided in Massachusetts. The long trips south were tiring for the old soldier, and he died just two months before the park was dedicated. The Confederate soldier on the commission resided in Petersburg and continued as an active participant in the development of the park almost until his death in 1941. Both of these veterans were enthusiastic about the park until the last, put in a lot of hard work, and became steadfast personal friends.<sup>1</sup>

#### Petersburg National Military Park Commission

By the act of 1926, the affairs of the Petersburg National Military Park were to be conducted by three commissioners appointed by the Secretary of War. The commissioners could be all army officers, or civilians, or a

combination of the two. As the youngest of the Civil War veterans were in their eighties, it was no longer practicable to specify their appointment to park commissions, although two veterans were appointed to the Petersburg body. An appropriation of \$15,000 was made for the work of the commission, which was authorized to receive gifts of land and contributions from the states, organizations, and individuals for the park; no lands were to be acquired by condemnation proceedings. Acting under the direction of the Secretary of War, the commission was to superintend the opening or repair of roads deemed necessary for the park and to mark with appropriate historical markers all earthworks, lines of battle, troop positions, buildings, and other historical points of interest within the park or in its vicinity.<sup>2</sup>

Lieutenant Colonel Henry C. Jewett, Corps of Engineers, United States Army, was appointed a member and secretary of the Petersburg National Military Park Commission in January 1928. At the time of his appointment, Colonel Jewett was on duty at the Engineer's Office, Norfolk, Virginia. He was a 1901 graduate of the United States Military Academy who had served with distinction in the American Expeditionary Forces in France as an infantry brigade commander and as chief of staff of the 91st Division. Colonel Jewett saw the Petersburg battlefields for the first time in April 1928. He was much impressed and believed the park would rank by far as the greatest and most interesting in America.<sup>3</sup>

Eighty-eight-year old Henry N. Comey of Danvers, Massachusetts, was appointed to the Petersburg commission in January 1928. He had enlisted in 1861 as a private in the Second Regiment Massachusetts infantry, and was a captain when the war ended. His regiment was in the Shenandoah Valley with Banks, fought at Gettysburg, where Comey was wounded, and participated in the Atlanta campaign and Sherman's march to the sea.<sup>4</sup> Carter R. Bishop was 77 years old at the time of his appointment to the commission in February

1928. He had served for only a few days as a Virginia Military Institute cadet in the Richmond defenses and was captured when the city was evacuated.<sup>5</sup>

After a series of meetings of the commission late in April 1928, work began on the survey of the proposed park land on May 7 at Pine Gardens, near the Confederate tunnels at Rives Salient on the defenses. The commission proposed to push the survey as rapidly as possible until the park area between the tunnels and City Point was completed. After a few weeks, the Progress-Index of June 10, 1928, reported that the progress accomplished in the preliminary work of laying out the park was "highly gratifying." A unique feature of the park, the editor pointed out, was that the Government had not spent one dollar in the acquisition of land, including the fortifications and the right of way of roads:

Every landowner approached has readily agreed to donate the necessary right-of-way and the site of the fort on his property. This generosity does credit to our people and while all the land necessary has not yet been secured, The Progress-Index ventures the opinion that none of the land holders who have not been approached will be found unwilling to deed over without financial consideration so much of his property as may be needed.

Early in June 1928, Colonel Howard L. Landers of the historical section, Army War College, spent almost a week in Petersburg studying the battlefields and conferring with the commission. He was in charge of a small group from the historical section detailed to make studies to assist Congress in the selection of battlefields to be established as national parks. Their work began in 1926 and continued through 1932, and it was largely on the basis of their first studies that Petersburg was among the six national military parks created from 1926 to 1933. The criteria for a "national military park," or Class I park, were established in a 1925 battlefield classification study:

Battles worthy of commemoration by the establishment of national military parks...should be battles of exceptional political and military importance and interest whose effects were far-reaching, whose fields are worthy of

preservation for detailed military and historical study, and which are suitable to serve as memorials to the armies engaged.<sup>6</sup>

Maps of the land already donated for the park were being prepared during early June, as well as maps showing proposed acquisitions. Permanent boundary markers for acquired land were also being put in by the commission, and work on clearing acquired land of underbush was expected to begin about the first of July. Colonel Landers recommended that the proposed 20-mile concrete road through the park should be 60 feet wide and beautified with shrubbery. The road, he believed, would greatly enhance the value of the country through which it passed, and every property owner thus far approached was readily agreeable to give land needed for the roadway. Congressman Drewry at this time was contacting authorities in Washington in an effort to procure guns for use on the battlefield.<sup>7</sup>

In June, a report on the lands proposed for the park was submitted to the Secretary of War. The commission was guided in the plans by the recommendations set forth by the preliminary commission of 1925, of which James Anderson, Carter R. Bishop, and Colonel Pope were members. The hearings on the bill in Congress, and public sentiment on the park in Petersburg and its neighboring counties, were other influencing factors on the commission's plans for the development of the park. One hundred eighty-five acres was the amount of land originally proposed for acquisition by the commission, which further recommended:

1. That roads along each of the main lines of the Union and Confederate armies, with connecting roads, be constructed.
2. The procurement by donation of all forts, trenches, and other earthworks contiguous to the roads included in the park.
3. The acquisition of the Crater, and the Commission, with the aid of the Petersburg Battlefield Park Association, would endeavor to acquire the Crater battlefield.

4. In addition to transferring to the park 200 acres from Camp Lee, it would be desirable to increase the acreage in the vicinity of the Jordan house site and Battery Five.

The estimated amount needed to carry out the plan was \$1,065,350. As soon as the commission's plan for the park was approved by the Secretary of War, an office would be set up and a competent engineer would be hired to survey the parcels of ground needed for the park. The commission further stated in their report that they "would cooperate with the association of citizens of Petersburg in promoting public sentiment on the Park."<sup>8</sup>

The Secretary of War made it apparent in a letter to the commission dated September 7, 1928, that the park would require more land than the original estimate of 185 acres. His letter in part read:

To preserve for historical purposes the breastworks, the earthworks, walls, or other defenses or shelters used by the armies therein...cannot be obtained by merely connecting with a road several isolated forts or earthworks.... It is most important that the Commission make every effort possible to secure the donation of sufficient land to insure the preservation of the forts and trenches adjacent to or in the immediate vicinity of the road and boulevard system. As far as possible, this land should be in one continuous strip.<sup>9</sup>

Under the principles outlined in the Secretary's letter, the commission drew its plans for the park and submitted them on April 5, 1929. With certain modifications, these plans were approved by the Secretary on June 29, 1929. Included in the approved plans was a request for an appropriation of \$780,531.00 to be used in the establishment of the park.<sup>10</sup>

Colonel Jewett's service with the commission was of short duration for within less than a year he was replaced by Lieutenant Colonel James Blyth, Infantry, U.S. Army, who came to Petersburg on October 26, 1928, to continue the operations preliminary to the establishment of the park. Before coming to Petersburg he had shown ability in surveying defenses and fortifications in the Philippines and in the beautification of the Presidio of San Francisco for the

Panama-Pacific International Exposition of 1915. He had also served four years in Washington as chief statistician for the War Department General Staff. In a press interview, Blyth said that he was anxious that the people of Petersburg stand behind the commission in the undertaking, which is "a work that takes time, but is a work that has already begun."<sup>11</sup>

At this time the commission occupied office space on the fifth floor of the Union Trust and Mortgage Company Building, Rooms 509 and 519, located on the corner of Sycamore and West Tabb streets in Petersburg. Associated with Colonel Blyth in his work for the commission was William P. Jervey, U.S. Civil Engineer, who was a native of Powhatan County but recently a resident of Norfolk. He had been in Petersburg from 1904 to 1908 on the harbor work.<sup>12</sup>

As planned by the Commission the park would circle almost around Petersburg. Beginning east of the city at Battery One on the original Confederate line (Dimmock Line), it would extend to the forts southwest of the city. Fort McGilvery north of the Hopewell Road (State Route 36) would be included, and going south, the park would take in Fort Stedman, Gracie's Dam, the Crater, and, crossing the Baxter Road (State Route 460), it would include Fort Meikle, Fort Rice, Fort Sedgwick, and Rives Salient on the Confederate defenses. Then, going south, down the Jerusalem Plank Road (U.S. Route 301), it would extend west from Fort Davis, across Johnson Road and the Halifax Road (State Route 604) to Fort Wadsworth. From there, the park would extend westward, across the Atlantic Coast Line Railroad, to Fort Keene on the Vaughan Road, then along Liberty Road to Fort Urmston on the Squirrel Level Road (State Route 613), then through the woods past Fort Conahey to Fort Fisher, Fort Welch, Fort Gregg, and Fort Wheaton. From Fort Fisher it would follow the Church Road (State Route 672) north to the Boydton Plank Road and to Fort Gregg. Going east along the

Confederate defenses, it would take in Rohoic Dam, Battery 45 (Fort Lee), across the Atlantic Coast Line Railroad to Battery Pegram, Fort Walker, and then down South Boulevard to the Jerusalem Plank Road. The property required would largely be long strips of land, especially on the lines south of Petersburg. The projected land required, as of December 1929, was approximately 480 acres.<sup>13</sup>

By the time Colonel Blyth was transferred from Petersburg in January 1930, almost all of the preliminary work needed for the establishment of the park had been accomplished. Field surveys of the land involved had been completed, and tracings and descriptions of the desired tracts of land were turned over to the Petersburg Battlefield Association, which would acquire the land and superintend its transfer to the Federal Government. Also by the time of Colonel Blyth's departure, 179.71 acres of donated land had already been acquired and cleared of underbrush. Forty-three acres had been offered, but had not as then been accepted.<sup>14</sup>

Colonel Blyth was assigned to new duties as quartermaster of Fort Monroe and the Chesapeake Bay district and left Petersburg on January 4, 1930.<sup>15</sup> His successor on the commission was Colonel Tenny Ross, Infantry, U.S. Army, who was then on duty at Fredericksburg, Virginia, as member and secretary of the Fredericksburg and Spotsylvania County Battlefields Memorial Commission. His duties as member and secretary of the Petersburg National Military Park Commission were in addition to those at Fredericksburg, where he maintained his office. On the eve of Colonel Ross's first visit, Franklin W. Smith, president of the Petersburg Battlefield Park Association, summarized the status of the park:

Colonel Ross has succeed Colonel Blyth, and he will be in Pettersburg on his first official visit this month. The Petersburg Battlefield Park will be a wonderful proposition when completed, and the War Department are

making their plans to build the park just as soon as the land is donated. We have been working on the acquisition of this land for the past three years, during which time we have secured a good many tracts. Colonel Blyth commenced turning over blueprints to us last Summer and in the Fall, and since that time we have been very active in securing land. As the Act of Congress does not call for condemnation proceedings we have just had to persuade the various land owners to give their land. While we are making good progress considering the enormous project we are putting through, it necessarily takes considerable time to get the various names on the "dotted line" and all the titles cleared.<sup>16</sup>

In 1930 the commission procured new office space, and on June 3, it moved into three rooms on the third floor of the Medical Arts Building at Franklin and Adams streets.

On June 11, 1930, Major Arthur E. Wilbourn, Cavalry, U.S. Army, succeeded Colonel Ross as member and secretary of the Petersburg National Military Park Commission. Like his predecessor, Major Wilbourn was also a member and secretary of the Fredericksburg and Spotsylvania County Battlefields Memorial Commission, and maintained his office at Fredericksburg. Before he assumed his duties at Fredericksburg and Petersburg, Major Wilbourn had gained recognition for his wide historical perspective at the Army's school at Leavenworth and at the War College in Washington. But equally if not more impressive was the fact that he was a graduate of both the Virginia Military Institute (1904) and the United States Military Academy (1908). He had served as a cavalry lieutenant during the Punitive Expedition in Mexico and as a major during World War I, in the Signal Corps Aviation Section on assignments at various stateside airfields. He was commissioned a lieutenant colonel of infantry in 1918, but the signing of the armistice prevented his regiment from going overseas. Major Wilbourn served as the executive member of the two battlefield commissions until 1933, when the parks at Fredericksburg and Petersburg were transferred to the Department of the Interior.<sup>17</sup>

An old fashioned barbecue and Brunswick stew dinner was given at the park on October 28, 1930. That morning, Congressman Drewry, Franklin W. Smith, and a number of other officials were at the Hopewell airport to meet the distinguished guests who flew in from Washington: Assistant Secretary of War Frederick H. Payne, Quartermaster General John L. DeWitt, Colonel Howard L. Landers, and two other officers, a Colonel Gibson and Major Haslip. They were conducted to the park where they were greeted by the other guests, who included local civic and patriotic organizations, the Petersburg Battlefield Park Association, and the residents of Prince George and Dinwiddie counties who had donated land to the park. Speeches were restricted to brief informal responses by the local and Washington guests, who were conducted on an inspection tour of the park. It was the largest gathering of distinguished government officials held at the park since its establishment. Congressman Drewry had made the arrangements for the affair, and in accepting his invitation, Colonel Landers wrote:

The Petersburg project was one of the first to occupy my attention. It has a peculiar appeal possessed by no other battlefield, in that so great a number of forts are still in an excellent state of preservation. Your community is in possession of physical remains of war, far surpassing in extent all others in this country. These forts and lines of trenches are assets of great cultural and financial value, the worth of which Petersburg will appreciate more and more as time goes on....I know that the development of the project is slower than we had hoped it would be, due to conditions of a national character which none of us can control. Nevertheless, the Petersburg Battlefield Park Association has never lost its aggressiveness in forwarding the work. No individual deserves greater thanks from the community for persistent efforts before congress and the war department, in behalf of the park, than yourself.<sup>18</sup>

The commission in July 1931 moved its offices again, to a six-room concrete house located on the north side of the Hopewell Road about one and a half miles east of Petersburg. Three rooms were used for offices and the remainder for storage purposes. In June 1933, the commission made still another move, this time to Room 208 on the second floor of the old Post Office Building on the southeast corner of West Tabb and Union streets in Petersburg.

On April 9, 1932, an invitation to attend the dedication of the park on June 20 was extended in person to President Hoover, but, as it later developed, the President was unable to include a visit to Petersburg on his schedule. Congressman Drewry arranged for the delegation's visit to the White House, where they were received by the President, who took time out from an all-day conference to welcome the Petersburg visitors. In addition to Congressman Drewry, the delegation consisted of Captains Bishop and Comey; Major Wilbourn; Mayor John R. Jolly of Petersburg; Franklin W. Smith; E. H. Crutchfield, president of the Petersburg Chamber of Commerce; and J. V. Colston, resident park engineer. After the visit, well covered by reporters and photographers, the delegation left for Petersburg, and Captain Comey departed for his home in Massachusetts.<sup>19</sup>

On April 15, 1932, Commissioner Comey died in Lexington, Massachusetts, at the age of 92. In respect to his memory, the flags on all public buildings in Petersburg were directed to be placed at half mast. Captain Bishop left the city immediately for Danvers, Massachusetts, to attend the funeral, not only as a good friend, but as the official representative of the city of Petersburg. On July 9, Seward W. Jones, a prominent businessman of Boston and the designer and builder of the Pennsylvania monuments on the site of Fort Mahone and at Fort Stedman, was appointed to fill the vacancy.<sup>20</sup>

#### Land Acquisition, 1927-1932

Survey work by U.S. Civil Engineer William P. Jervey to determine the boundaries of land proposed to be acquired for the park began near Fort Stedman about the first of January 1929. By the end of September, 444 acres had been surveyed, and Colonel Blyth made an estimate that 500 acres would be required for the park.<sup>21</sup> That figure, however, was slightly reduced by December, when

he estimated the needed acreage at about 480. Nearly 180 acres had been donated, leaving about 300 more acres to be acquired.<sup>22</sup>

Included in the land acquired by the end of 1929 was about 13 acres on which stood Fort Walker and Battery Pegram, on the Confederate defenses. The City Council had on July 19, 1927, adopted a resolution authorizing this land in Lee Memorial Park to be deeded over to the Federal Government for the park, on condition that the battlefield park be established within three years from the date of the resolution.<sup>23</sup> A more celebrated earthwork on the Confederate line was acquired on August 13, 1928, when Dr. H. C. Henry, superintendent of Central State Hospital, delivered to Captain Bishop the deed transferring the Fort Gregg tract from the state of Virginia to the Federal Government. The bill authorizing the transfer, through the Virginia General Assembly, was introduced by Samuel D. Rogers, delegate from Petersburg and an avid student of the Civil War. Years before when Dr. W. F. Drewry, city manager of Petersburg in 1928, was head of the Central State Hospital, he had Fort Gregg cleared off with the exception of 13 large pine trees, which represented, he said, "each of the states in the Confederacy."<sup>24</sup> Other sites acquired by the end of 1929 included Fort Wheaton, a Union fort located near Fort Fisher, and the site of the signal tower in Dinwiddie County, which was donated by Mrs. Annie E. Pegram; and a small strip of land near the Pennsylvania monument and the site of Fort Mahone, donated by B. Thomas M. Smith.<sup>25</sup>

Although the Crater had been envisioned as a part of the park since the beginning, it was not included in December 1929 in the estimated 300 acres needed for the park. Presumably this was because there was little if any chance that the land would be donated by the Crater Battlefield Association, a commercial enterprise which operated a club house and an 18-hole golf course on the property. The Federal Government could not buy it, nor was it possible to

obtain the land through condemnation proceedings. A suggestion, and that is as far as the idea got, put forth in the fall of 1929 was for the city of Petersburg to buy the Crater area for the Federal Government for inclusion in the park, with a lease to the Crater Battlefield Association to use the club and golf course.<sup>26</sup> Aside from the golf course, the Association maintained a museum and fostered visitation to the Crater and reexcavated mine tunnel as a business, charging an admission fee. They were, however, sympathetic to the park idea and granted to the Federal Government right of way to the Crater. The inclusion of the Crater battlefield in the park was seven years away.

In January 1930, the commission estimated that 607.40 acres was desired for the park, but a reappraisal in 1931 reduced it to 507.38 acres. The park at this time was divided into sub-areas as a means of simplifying the procedure in obtaining land. The needed amount in the Battery Five area, 64.13 acres, was the first to be acquired in its entirety. The other areas into which the park was divided were Fort Stedman, Fort Sedgwick, Fort Gregg (Confederate), Fort Howard, and Fort Urmston; all other areas were classified under "detached area." Of the new amount of land needed, 507.38 acres, 240.91 acres had been transferred to the Federal Government by the end of the 1931 fiscal year. A valuable addition to the park was made in the fall of 1931 with the donation of a nine-acre tract, which included Confederate Battery 45 (Fort Lee), nearly a half-mile of breastworks, and Rohoic Dam, also called Lee's Dam. It was announced in November that a Whitworth rifle which had been located would be placed in the battery. The donor of this property was Major General William Lassiter, brother of State Senator Charles T. Lassiter and Congressman Francis Rives Lassiter, and one of the three Virginians in World War I who attained the rank of major general by August 1918.<sup>27</sup>

In 1932, the total acquired for the park was given as 498.39 acres. At the same time, 206.11 acres were reported as having clear titles, and 73.79 acres as having been deeded over to the Federal Government but with unclear titles; 58.71 acres had been promised but not deeded. This left 159.78 acres to be acquired.<sup>28</sup>

Acquiring land for the park had its difficulties. Misunderstandings with property owners resulted in the failure to obtain at least one historically significant tract of land, which included Fort Sedgwick and a section of the Confederate defenses at Rives Salient. The owner of this property, David Lyon, Jr., offered to donate about 30 acres, while a representative of the commission tried to bargain for 51 acres. The unfortunate result was that nothing was obtained. Years later the earthworks were leveled and a parking lot for a shopping center now covers the site.<sup>29</sup>

#### Physical Developments, 1929-1933

Work on clearing and improving acquired land was in progress during January 1929 by a temporary force of 32 laborers, who opened and maintained a temporary road in the Battery Five area, the first section to be cleared. Colonel Wilbourn, addressing the Petersburg Rotary Club March 14, 1929, announced that Forts Walker, Haskell, and Stedman and Confederate Batteries Four, Five, and Six had been cleared. The public was periodically informed of the progress being made at the park through Louise Aaron's columns in the Progress-Index.

In July 1929 she reminded her readers:

Building the park was not merely a matter of erecting monuments and tablets, of constructing fine roads, and publicity. One would hardly have guessed that great stretches of breastworks and other fortifications lay within the tangled undergrowth and dense trees that cover the greater part of the park area. To build a military park meant penetrating those woods and cleaning up.<sup>30</sup>

In clearing the park of undergrowth some interesting discoveries were made. In 1929, while working at Gracie's Salient, a dugout was uncovered, but within a year the crumbling of its walls made it necessary to support them with timber. But an even greater find was made early in 1930, when workmen opened a tunnel at Fort Stedman. About 3-1/2-feet square, the tunnel branched out in several directions toward the Confederate lines. The shaft to the tunnel had an opening ten by seven feet and was twelve feet deep. The tunnel was comparatively dry, and the supporting timbers were well preserved. Workmen in the process of stabilizing the tunnel recovered bayonets, scabbards, a cartridge box full of cartridges, and other articles left behind by the Union soldiers. It was announced that the public would be advised when they could see the tunnel. Apparently the tunnel and the dugout at Gracie's Salient were too difficult to maintain for visitation and to protect from vandalism, as they have been sealed and covered for many years.<sup>31</sup>

A brief ceremony on the breaking of ground for the construction of the first roadway to be built in the park was held at Fort Stedman on May 14, 1932. The ground was broken by Congressman Drewry, and Franklin W. Smith, president of the Petersburg Battlefield Park Association, presided at the ceremony. Among those present were Mayor John R. Jolly of Petersburg, Major Wilbourn, Homer T. Atkinson, and representatives of the city of Petersburg, A. P. Hill Camp, Confederate Veterans, United Daughters of the Confederacy, and Sons of Confederate Veterans. The ceremony opened the construction of about 2-1/2 miles of roadway in the Fort Stedman area, accomplished at a cost of \$4,537.85.

Also during 1932, local labor was employed from time to time to complete the clearing of the Battery Five and Fort Stedman areas.<sup>32</sup> Most of the work of clearing underbrush and the development of roads and trails in the park was done by the Emergency Conservation Work (ECW) agency, created by the act of

March 31, 1933, but the name Civilian Conservation Corps soon supplanted its official designation. About 173 enrollees of CCC Company 1364 arrived from Camp Meade, Maryland, early on the morning of July 13, 1933, and established a camp, Camp MP-2, in the Fort Stedman area of the park. The enrollees were all white veterans of World War I. After almost a week used to set up the camp, which included a mess hall and about 50 tents, work in the park began. Each day, Captain J. P. Richter, commanding officer of the camp, assigned working parties to John V. Colston, resident engineer, who directed the work projects.<sup>33</sup> The Progress-Index editorialized on July 17, 1933:

Even those people who are so short-sighted as to fail to appreciate the value of the reforestation work of the C.C.C. cannot fail to recognize the permanent worth of the work which 200 civilian workers are beginning today in the Petersburg National Military Park. Most people, we daresay, who have not taken the trouble to familiarize themselves with this project think of it as Battery Five on the north side of the Hopewell Highway and the Fort Stedman area on the south side and have a vague idea that in time the park will include a large territory. The truth is that in six months Petersburg will be almost surrounded by a military park of attractive appearance and, more important still of course, of deep and enduring importance to all lovers of history and especially to students of military history. For this hastened development of the park we have the administration's conservation program to thank.

#### Dedication of the Petersburg National Military Park, June 20, 1932

Formal dedication ceremonies for the Petersburg National Military Park were held on the morning of June 20, 1932, at Battery Five. An estimated several thousand persons attended, and an accurate check by the police showed 1,800 automobiles were parked in the area. Present were a large number of veterans and other delegates enroute to Richmond for the 42nd Annual Reunion of the United Confederate Veterans. A full holiday was declared for Petersburg, and summer schools closed so that students could attend the dedication and participate in the afternoon pageant.

Franklin W. Smith was general chairman of the ceremony and serving as honorary chairman was General Homer Atkinson, who in three days would be elected

Commander in Chief, United Confederate Veterans. Following a concert by the Tubize Band of Hopewell, the invocation was delivered by the Rev. J. Clayton Reed, D.D., a Confederate veteran and Methodist minister of Blackstone, Virginia.<sup>34</sup> Petersburg's Mayor John R. Jolly then extended a welcome to all visitors.

Congressman Drewry, presiding as master of ceremonies, introduced Assistant Secretary of War Frederick Huff Payne of Massachusetts, who delivered the dedicatory address. This was a return visit for him, as he had been a special guest at a barbecue given at the park in 1930. Drewry, in introducing the principal speaker, said that the dedication of the park marked the accomplishment of nearly a half-century of effort on the part of the people of Petersburg to commemorate the siege of the city. He pointed out that the park was the result not only of the efforts of the people of Petersburg, Virginians, and Southerners, but that "no greater help was rendered in the matter than by the citizens of the State of Massachusetts, for whose help we here express our gratitude." He added further that under these circumstances it was especially fitting that the speaker for the dedication should be from the state.

The Assistant Secretary of War spoke of the significance of the occasion:

Today marks the fruition of years of painstaking effort and careful thought on the part of the citizens of this community and of local and national governmental agencies. Thanks to their patriotic activity there has been restored the setting of the last act of the Civil War's tragic drama. The opportunity has been provided for Americans of all time to draw inspiration from the valor, the patriotism, the devotion and the loyalty of the men who wore the Blue and of those who wore the Gray.

Payne paid tribute to the people whose efforts and generosity made possible the establishment of the park, and expressed gratification that Virginia's "fields of military renown are lastingly perpetuated." He reminded his listeners that a generation ago, the occasion of the dedication would have demanded an earnest pronouncement on the reconciliation of North and South, but that "In our time...

reconciliation is so much a fact, so solid an element in our national structure, as to require only acknowledgment." Payne's conclusion was indicative of those years:

This park is more than a monument to the past. It is a pledge to the future. The men and women who have striven so effectively for its realization obviously feel that there is going to be room in the world for happiness and relaxation. They know that the dead hand of depression does not hold us in a permanent grip. They do not expect the next generations to be living in log cabins and shooting bears in the ruins of Richmond. They see rather the Americans of the future, self-reliant and solvent, who will have the means and the opportunity to come to Petersburg and to study both the triumphs and vicissitudes of our history. When the vision of the founders of this memorial is grasped by all America, most of our troubles will be over. It is, then, as a portent of a shining future as well as a symbol of a glorious past that we dedicate this park.

Guests at the dedication included Mrs. Frederick H. Payne; Brigadier General Alexander E. Williams, personal representative of Quartermaster General John L. DeWitt; Colonel R. T. Ellis, representative of the War Department; Captain Jeffrey Montague, U.S. Army; Captain G. F. Harrison, U.S. Army; and Lieutenant Kimbell, aide to the Assistant Secretary of War. Divisional commanders, United Confederate Veterans, present were General W. R. Jacobs of Mississippi, General Gustav Mouton of Louisiana, General J. P. McCarther of Arkansas, General Edgar Warfield of Virginia, General J. W. Dykes, past commander of the Arkansas Division, and General J. E. Williamson of Alabama.

In the afternoon a pageant, chronicled by Judge R. T. Wilson, was presented at Fort Stedman. Staged in eight episodes, the scenes depicted highlights of Petersburg history, including the Battle of June 9, 1864, in which the participants were high school students and Spanish-American War veterans; Battle of the Crater, staged by local companies of the First Virginia Infantry, Virginia National Guard; Battle of Fort Stedman, with National Guardsmen as participants; and the observance of Petersburg's first Memorial Day, in which Captain Bishop had the role of a Confederate veteran. The pageant, filmed by Fox Movietone, was declared a spectacular success.<sup>35</sup>

## Chapter Seven

### Transfer of the Park to the Department of the Interior and Administrative Changes

On August 10, 1933, the Petersburg National Military Park was transferred from the War Department to the National Park Service, United States Department of the Interior. The transfer was in accordance with the Federal Government's Reorganization Act of March 3, 1933. Monuments, military parks, and the National Capital Parks administered by other Federal agencies were transferred to the National Park Service by the terms of Executive Order 6166 of June 10, 1933.<sup>1</sup>

When it was announced that Colonel Wilbourn was to be relieved of his duties with the parks at Petersburg and Fredericksburg, Franklin W. Smith, president of the Petersburg Battlefield Park Association, stated in a press interview that "Petersburg owes him [Wilbourn] a debt of gratitude for his untiring work on this vast project which will be more and more appreciated as the years go on."<sup>2</sup> In appreciation for his work at Petersburg, Colonel and Mrs. Wilbourn were presented with token gifts by Congressman Drewry on behalf of the Rotary, Kiwanis, and Lions clubs of Petersburg at the annual picnic on the evening of August 10, 1933.<sup>3</sup>

Following the transfer of the park to the Department of the Interior, B. Floyd Flickinger was designated acting superintendent. He was also at this time serving as acting superintendent of the Colonial National Monument at Yorktown, where he maintained his office. The work at the park was conducted under the supervision of John V. Colston, project superintendent at the Emergency Conservation Work (Civilian Conservation Corps) camp, MP-2, located at Fort Stedman. A park field office was maintained

at the camp, and in September 1938 it was moved into the foremen's quarters, located on a knoll near the camp on the opposite side of the old Prince George Courthouse Road. The new building, of frame construction with tar paper covering, provided accommodations for the foremen on patrol duty, official visitors, and foremen who might desire living quarters on the park. The building after the disbandment of the CCC was used as a park employee's residence, and in 1955, it underwent extensive renovation to serve as a residence for the park superintendent.

Regular, or full-time, National Park Service administration at Petersburg began in December 1933, when Branch Spalding arrived as historical technician. Spalding was in charge of the historical work of the park and maintained his office in Petersburg at the McKenney Library, where he had with him a historical staff most of whom were employed under the Civil Works Administration program. The Petersburg National Military Park Commission, still in existence after the park's transfer from the War Department, retained its office in the old Post Office Building; in effect, this was park headquarters.

On September 4, 1935, Junior Park Historian J. Walter Coleman was appointed acting superintendent of the park, assuming the duties which were formerly part of those of Superintendent Flickinger. A Pennsylvanian, Coleman received his Ph.D. from Catholic University and had entered the National Park Service in 1933. He served as a historian in Washington and at Vicksburg before coming to Petersburg. The Progress-Index announced the appointment as a good omen for the community and expressed hope that Dr. Coleman's assignment would end the long period in which the park, in comparison with others, had languished in development:

We have been grateful for a few miles of roadway while more recently created parks were receiving magnificent headquarters buildings and were otherwise being developed. Petersburg, which in interest is second to none of the historical parks in the nation and which possesses considerably more interest and more physical memorials than most of them do, has been slowly developed, largely because there was no one person with central and executive authority.<sup>4</sup>

And much progress in the development of the park was accomplished under Dr. Coleman, who on July 1, 1936, was appointed superintendent.

The park in March 1936 was placed under the general administration of a coordinating superintendent, Branch Spalding, who maintained his office at Fredericksburg as superintendent of the Fredericksburg and Spotsylvania County Battlefields Memorial National Military Park. Spalding, former historical technician at Petersburg, served as coordinating superintendent for all Civil War areas in Virginia: Manassas National Battlefield Park, Richmond National Battlefield Park, Fredericksburg and Spotsylvania County Battlefields Memorial National Military Park, Petersburg National Military Park, and Appomattox Court House National Historical Monument.

In 1937, the National Park Service was decentralized into four regions, and the Petersburg National Military Park became an area under Region One. Regional headquarters were established in Richmond, Virginia. On July 1, 1940, the park was withdrawn from the administrative control of the coordinating superintendent in Fredericksburg. At the same time the fiscal accounts were transferred to Petersburg, where they were kept until 1948, when they were transferred to Colonial National Historical Park. In February 1955 the fiscal accounts of the park were returned to the regional office in Richmond.

#### Park Offices

Upon completion in November 1936 of the new Post Office Building at the corner of Franklin and Adams streets in Petersburg, the park office was

moved from the old Post Office Building, where it had been since June 1933. Three rooms, top floor, east side, were assigned at first to the National Park Service, but later during World War II the office space was reduced to two rooms, which continued to serve until June 27, 1955. On that date park headquarters were transferred to the park proper, and offices were set up in the 20-room Crater House in accordance with plans developed for complete and full administrative-museum use of the building. From 1936 until 1955, the Crater House had served a dual role--one room for the museum and public contact, with public rest rooms in the back; and the remainder of the one-time club house quarters for each superintendent of the park. The plan for converting the Crater House into a museum and administration building was conceived by Floyd B. Taylor soon after he succeeded George F. Emery as superintendent on January 11, 1953. Emery was promoted to assistant superintendent at Colonial National Historical Park and entered on duty there on October 28, 1952. Park Ranger Melvin Proffitt served as acting superintendent during the interim between superintendents.

#### Petersburg National Military Park Commission

The park's transfer to the Department of the Interior in 1933 did not terminate the Petersburg National Military Park Commission. Two years later, in July 1935, the distinguished historian and biographer Dr. Douglas S. Freeman was appointed to a vacancy on the commission which had gone unfilled for over a year. Carter R. Bishop, chairman of the commission, as well as the Progress-Index, had long urged the appointment of Dr. Freeman, but there had been some question as to the right of the Department of the Interior to fill a vacancy on a commission created under the War Department. In announcing Dr. Freeman's appointment, the

Progress-Index stated that his profound knowledge of Confederate history and his appreciation of the values of the park would make him a valuable member of the commission, and "while that body acts in an advisory capacity only, its influence in the affairs of the park is considerable." Captain Bishop was quick to inform the editor that the commission was "in complete charge of the Petersburg National Military Park, and all its affairs and not in an advisory capacity." But exactly how the Commission functioned at this time is not clear. It does seem that it no longer had its former importance; otherwise, the vacancy would not have been allowed to remain unfilled for over a year.<sup>5</sup>

#### Park Personnel

At the end of June 1937, when Dr. Coleman was superintendent, the park staff included a junior park historian, cemetery superintendent, and a seasonal ranger-historian, all of whom were National Park Service employees. There was also a junior historian and a junior assistant technician, who were under the Emergency Conservation Work (Civilian Conservation Corps) program. The remainder of the staff consisted of CCC personnel: a camp, or project, superintendent, who was in charge of Camp NP-2; four foremen; one senior foreman engineer; one junior historian; one mechanic; one blacksmith; and a clerk. Later, in 1938, a National Park Service junior clerk-stenographer was added. The job title of the junior park historian was changed to junior historical technician and there were other changes, but basically this was the park staff until the disbandment of the Civilian Conservation Corps in 1942.<sup>6</sup>

The disbandment of the CCC left the park with the smallest staff ever, yet by the end of fiscal year 1943, Superintendent Oscar F.

Northington, Jr., was able to report that the park was in better condition than it had been for a long time. This was due in part to the army at neighboring Camp Lee providing technical and labor details, which helped to maintain and protect the park, in return for land use permits. Land transfer negotiations between the army and the park had, with other differences, created strained relations, but the difficulties were eventually worked out to the satisfaction of both parties. No small part in the park's good performance was due to the ability and enthusiasm of its reduced staff which consisted of the park superintendent, junior historical technician, cemetery superintendent, park ranger, and the junior clerk stenographer.<sup>7</sup>

But the end of July 1947 found the park in a far less desirable state. For the first time in its history, reported Superintendent George F. Emery, the full burden of park maintenance was upon the shoulders of the National Park Service. From 1933 until 1942, the CCC provided adequate maintenance, and beginning in 1942, the army gave considerable help, but this assistance was withdrawn by the summer of 1947. Appropriations provided for only one maintenance position in the park of more than 1,300 acres and the national cemetery with 6,000 graves. The regrettable recourse was to reduce maintenance standards until additional funds were available for adequate maintenance personnel. At this time, the permanent park staff, aside from the superintendent, consisted of the park historian, cemetery superintendent, park ranger, and a clerk. A seasonal ranger-historian reported each June for three months duty, but at other times it was necessary for the superintendent and park historian to keep the museum open each day. Protection suffered during this period as it was necessary that the park ranger assume maintenance responsibilities. His

patrols of the outlying areas of the park were less frequent, and as a consequence, there was an increase in vandalism in those sections of the park.<sup>8</sup> In time, the problem was relieved by the addition of three or four laborers to the park force.

A significant change in the staff occurred on September 30, 1949, when Benjamin F. Moore, superintendent of Poplar Grove National Cemetery, retired after 16 years of service, all of them at Poplar Grove. His position was abolished, and for the first time in its history of 83 years, the cemetery was without a superintendent.<sup>9</sup>

Other changes were forthcoming. The seasonal position of ranger-historian was replaced in 1950 by a permanent historical aid, and this position in 1953 was replaced by a second park historian. Changes also occurred in the maintenance force, and in 1956 the park, under Superintendent Floyd B. Taylor, had two park historians, a chief clerk, park ranger, caretaker, and two laborers.

#### Civilian Conservation Corps

Scarcely remembered today is the role of the Emergency Conservation Work agency, or the Civilian Conservation Corps, in the development of the park. CCC Company 1364 was stationed at camp MP-2, located at Fort Stedman on Hare Hill. Although not counted as members of the park staff, the army officers in command at the camp had a vital role in the affairs of the park. These officers, either from the Regular Army or the Army Reserve, were supposed to remain on CCC duty for a tour of six months, but it was almost always extended for longer periods. The captain on duty there had complete charge of the camp, and his functions included personnel administration and the discipline and welfare of the CCC enroll-

ees. He was authorized to mete out punishments and could give dishonorable discharges in cases of serious misdemeanors such as refusal to work, desertion, and habitual breaking of camp rules. The second in command, a lieutenant, had varied responsibilities, often combining the duties of a finance officer, motor officer, and quartermaster. There were also a medical officer and a number of noncommissioned officers from the Regular Army.<sup>10</sup>

The first commanding officer of Camp MP-2 was Captain D. L. Richter, who arrived in July 1933 with the first contingent of enrollees. His successor was apparently Captain J. J. Matthews, who reported for duty on April 17, 1934, and remained there as commanding officer until his retirement from active duty early in July 1937. Also retiring the same month, after a year's duty, was Lieutenant Paul A. Welch, second in command. Matthews' successor was Captain Alvin T. Wilson, and Welch's was Lieutenant Lieutenant Carl H. Nelson of the Coast Artillery Reserve from Hampton, Virginia.<sup>11</sup> Captain R. L. Wisler was in command in March 1941 and was, as far as can be determined, the camp's last commanding officer.<sup>12</sup>

A substantial increase in park visitation during the fiscal year 1937, largely brought about by the publicity connected with the reenactment of the Battle of the Crater, necessitated an extension of the guide service. In June there were four WPA guides and six CCC guides, all carefully selected and trained at weekly lecture meetings. The CCC guides were veterans who could not perform heavy labor. Since the establishment of the camp in the park in 1933, most of the work of clearing underbrush, road building, sodding, and tree planting was done by the CCC. The average monthly strength of the company at the park during 1938-1940 was 194 enrollees, all white veterans. A daily average of 133

worked on various projects in the park, and beginning in October 1938, one foreman and 39 enrollees operated a side camp in the Richmond National Battlefield Park.<sup>13</sup> In its final days the camp, which had been redesignated as CCC Camp Va. NP(D)-3, had an average daily working strength of 139. Of this number, 103 were turned out daily for work in the park and at Camp Lee. When the camp closed, a good many of the veteran enrollees obtained work immediately, and almost all of the supervisory personnel found employment in the Petersburg vicinity.<sup>14</sup>

After the closing of the camp, the CCC equipment was transferred to Camp Lee, and until the end of the war the buildings were put to use by the army. In November 1946, the army withdrew from its use of the CCC camp and several of its training areas on park property. During 1948 the buildings were sold, with the park retaining some which were located beyond Fort Stedman, and others were removed from the view of Fort Stedman. Not until the fall of 1948 were the last vestiges of the camp on Hare Hill removed and the area restored to its original appearance after 15 years of use by the CCC and the army.<sup>15</sup>

## Chapter Eight

### Land Acquisitions - Roads and Trails

Ever since the idea of the park was conceived the inclusion of the Crater battlefield was envisioned. Negotiations for its acquisition over a long period of time were unsuccessful, but after 1934, when the Crater Battlefield Association folded and the Crater Golf Club closed, its acquisition was finally accomplished. On November 28, 1935, the Crater property was ordered to be put on the block at a public auction on January 10, 1936, to satisfy the first and second mortgages amounting to more than \$30,000. The holders of the first mortgages had received no payment on the unpaid principal for two years. Default in interest payments caused the bondholders to ask for a foreclosure, which meant a loss primarily to a number of Richmond golfers and businessmen, who in 1927, with about 15 shareholders from Petersburg, organized the club. The cost of building the clubhouse and golf course was about \$115,000, not including the cost of the Crater property. At the auction in January 1936, the Crater was purchased for \$20,000 by a number of Crater Battlefield Association bondholders, who granted the Federal Government an option to buy the property. On April 10, the day on which the option expired, the purchase had not been consummated, but it was a certainty. Details for the acquisition of the property had been completed by the National Park Service, with the approval of its purchase by the Secretary of the Interior, and President Roosevelt had signed an executive order for \$30,000 for the transaction. In time, the deed and title to the property were submitted to Washington through Branch Spalding, coordinating superintendent of the Virginia Civil War battlefields, and finally on July 18, 1936,

the transaction for the 128 acres comprising the Crater area was completed with the recording of the deed and the payment of \$24,720.51.<sup>1</sup>

In 1939 the Whitehill tract of 54 acres, located in the Battery Five area, was transferred to the Department of the Interior by the Bureau of Prisons, Department of Justice. This tract included the site of Whitehill, or the Friend house, and the Jordan house site.<sup>2</sup>

By the end of fiscal year 1940 the total acreage of the park was more than 2,000, which represented a substantial increase over the acreage of 346 in 1933, when the park was transferred from the War Department to the Department of the Interior.<sup>3</sup> During fiscal year 1943, however, 738.75 acres of park land were transferred to the War Department, thereby reducing park holdings to 1,328.25 acres. At the same time, in 1943, the War Department purchased 206 acres of private land which would eventually be transferred to the Department of the Interior in exchange. This acreage was along Siege Road and included the old Taylor farm, Spring Garden. Negotiations for the exchange were begun promptly. On September 7, 1949, by the approval of Public Law 293, the two tracts of land, 206 acres as described above, were transferred to the Department of the Interior. Section 2 of Public Law 293 authorized the Secretary of the Interior to adjust the boundaries of the park through exchange, purchase, or transfer, provided that the total area would not be increased. The act provided that the changes would become effective upon the publication of a description of the park holdings in the Federal Register.<sup>4</sup>

Since the earliest planning for the development of the park, the idea of having the major roads follow the main lines of fortifications had been paramount. The Petersburg Progress-Index of June 10, 1928, advised its readers that within a few days the clearing of a right-of-way

for the road connecting the numerous fortified points on the parallel Confederate and Union lines would begin. Progress was slow, but in 1955, with the exception of a few miles of roadway, this plan for the most part was realized. Although still incomplete, the present system permits the visitor to follow many miles of the remaining fortifications within the park, including large segments of the main lines of the Union and Confederate armies.

A major road development was begun in 1934, with a grant from Public Roads Administration funds. The first project under this appropriation was the building of a drive which extended westward from the Jerusalem Plank Road (U.S. Route 301) along the Union line to Fort Wadsworth, a distance of 3.25 miles. The roadway was landscaped following its completion.<sup>5</sup>

An informal ceremony was held on September 17, 1935, to mark the beginning of the new road from Battery 45 (Fort Lee) to Battery Pegram. The ceremony was held at the site of the double underpass at the intersection of the new road with the Halifax Street road and the Atlantic Coast Line railroad. Among the officials attending were City Manager Henry A. Yancey; Franklin W. Smith, president of the Petersburg Battlefield Park Association; Project Superintendent J.V. Colston, Petersburg National Military Park; William F. Mahone; and W.F. White of the Virginia Engineering Company of Newport News, which had the contract for the construction.<sup>6</sup> The overpass was completed in September 1936, and in 1938 the road (Defense Road) was surfaced and opened to the public.

The section of Flank Road from Fort Davis to Fort Wadsworth was resurfaced in 1946, as the old surface had been severely damaged by the

thawing and freezing of the preceding winter. In 1950 this road was again resurfaced.

Significant progress was made in the minor roads soon after the acquisition of the park by the National Park Service. In July 1937 the road from Confederate Battery Nine to the Hopewell Road (State Route 36) was opened to the public. Constructed with CCC labor and funds, the base surface was of crushed concrete obtained from the demolition of foundations of World War I buildings in the Camp Lee section of the park. The old Prince Georges Courthouse Road was reconstructed from Siege Road to Confederate Battery Nine in 1937 by the CCC. This historic road once connected Petersburg with Prince George Courthouse and was used by troops of both sides during the Civil War. Construction began in March 1938 with CCC funds and labor on Mortar Road, which encircled Battery Five and the site of "The Dictator," and the road was opened in September 1938. A new Crater entrance road was constructed in 1939, and four and a half miles of truck trails in the Camp Lee area of the park was completed by the CCC in the same year.

Work began September 25, 1941, on the Atlantic Coast Line overpass near Fort Wadsworth. The successful completion of the overpass and the opening of the road from Fort Wadsworth to the Vaughan Road would carry out further the plan of having the main park roads follow the line of Union earthworks in that area. The first estimated date for the completion of the overpass was November 1942; however, as this was at the time when the National Defense Program was getting into full operation, the shortage of labor and construction materials curtailed the progress of the project considerably. By August 1942, the overpass was only 32% completed when a

stop work order was received. The Federal Government, however, deemed the completion of the overpass necessary for the easy movement of troops in the State and the work was resumed. Bad weather, in addition to the inevitable shortage of labor, continued to hamper progress until finally the overpass was completed on August 12, 1944, almost three years after it was begun. The road from Fort Wadsworth to the Vaughan Road was surfaced and opened for public use in 1950. This road now passes under the Atlantic Coast Line Railroad near Fort Wadsworth.

A significant change in the park road system occurred in December 1955, when the Hopewell Road (State Route 36) entrance to Siege Road was closed, and the sections of hard surface at Union Battery Nine and on Hare Hill were obliterated. For a number of years previous to this, plans for interpretive development of this historic area to the fullest extent had been contemplated. Protests from commuters who had been using the road daily as a shortcut from the Walnut Hill section of Petersburg to Fort Lee and Hopewell were expected, but the number of complaints registered were far below all anticipation. This was probably the result of favorable publicity and cooperation received from the Petersburg Progress-Index, which in its news stories emphasized the view of the road closing from the standpoint of the park interpretive program. The newspaper carried several articles and pictures of the road closing, and in addition, printed verbatim a historical sketch of the area which was prepared by the park historian.<sup>7</sup> Somewhat to the surprise of park officials no "letters to the editor" complaining of the road closing appeared in the newspaper. Another factor which perhaps was responsible for the few complaints was the publicity then being given in the Richmond and

Petersburg papers about the probable effect of the route of the projected Richmond-Petersburg Toll Road on the park.

Trails for horseback riders were a popular attraction to the park in the late 1930s and early 40s. Eight miles of bridle trails, equipped with log jumps, were constructed. The location of riding stables near the park seemed to predict that riders using the park would increase. A horse show held near Fort Meikle on May 28, 1938, featured riders who frequently used the park trails. Current use of the trails by horseback riders is barely sufficient to justify their continued maintenance.<sup>8</sup>

## Chapter Nine

### The Crater

Although the transaction had not been completed, the acquisition of the Crater property was such a certainty that by late April 1936, the superintendent was occupying the former club house as a residence, and the museum and guide service were available to the public.<sup>1</sup> Superintendent Coleman on August 5, 1936, reported that a notable improvement had been made in the appearance of the Crater property. Plans were then well underway for the laying out of roads and landscaping; alterations to the former club house, now the superintendent's residence; and the restoration of the Union mine tunnel. For some years the tunnel had been closed as it had caved in at several points.<sup>2</sup>

When it became known that the Crater would be acquired a considerable amount of agitation arose for the reopening of the 18-hole golf course. The move for the reopening of the golf course, as a municipal project, had the endorsement of Petersburg's civic organizations and the city council as well. But the golfers' hopes were dashed in July 1937 when Acting Director Arthur E. Demaray of the National Park Service announced that a golf course could not be considered in the future plans for the park. The Park Service, Demaray said in a letter to the Petersburg Chamber of Commerce, considered the Crater primarily a military park, and the operation of a golf course on the property would detract considerably from its historical value and its appeal to thousands of people throughout the country who might be attracted to it. Most of the summer and fall of 1937 was spent in removing the golf course. The leveling of golf traps, trees, and greens was a considerable undertaking, but this work, together

with the planting of trees and shrubs to screen unsightly modern structures on the nearby highways, aided materially in the restoration of the wartime scene.<sup>3</sup>

In June 1937 the well and pump house at the Crater was completed except for the installation of the pump, which was done the following month. Plans for renovating the former club house were approved in July 1937, and work on the structure was underway in August. The alterations called for a new heating system, insulation of the ceilings, weatherstripping and the refinishing of interior woodwork as well as painting. Also included in the project, which extended into 1938, was a garage for the house, completed in November 1937, and the laying of an underground telephone cable.<sup>4</sup>

At first a partial restoration, at least, was contemplated for the Union mine tunnel, but at a conference in Washington attended by Superintendent Coleman and Junior Historian Raleigh C. Taylor on June 16, 1937, it was decided that for the time being only a restoration of the tunnel entrance would be undertaken.<sup>5</sup> Exploratory trenches to determine the exact location of the tunnel entrance began in April 1937 under the immediate supervision of Taylor, and Assistant Historian Oscar F. Northington, Jr., came down from Fredericksburg during the summer to direct the work.<sup>6</sup> Shell fragments, nails, pieces of boards, and other articles were recovered as the work progressed. As finally determined, the starting point of the tunnel checked very closely with the location of the stone monument placed there by the veterans of the 48th Pennsylvania in 1907. In November 1937, the remains of two Union soldiers were found. Excavations were still in progress in June 1938 when Dr. Henry Pleasants paid a timely visit to the park and made several suggestions concerning

the restoration of the tunnel entrance. Dr. Pleasants was the nephew of Colonel Henry Pleasants, 48th Pennsylvania, which dug the tunnel, and the author of The Tragedy of the Crater, published in 1938.<sup>7</sup> The reconstructed tunnel entrance was a popular feature of the Crater area for several years. Proper maintenance was apparently a problem during the war, and by the spring of 1946 the reconstructed entrance was obliterated.

A major improvement in the Crater area was the building of a new entrance road during the summer of 1939. Slight changes were made in the alignment of the old road, which was surfaced with crushed concrete. At the entrance, the Massachusetts monument was moved from the north side of the road to a grass panel that divided the exit and entrance ways.<sup>8</sup>

#### Battle of the Crater Re-enactment, April 30, 1937

Once committed to cooperating with local organizations in reenacting the Battle of the Crater, park employees expended no little time in preparing for the event. An immense amount of planning and publicity work was required, and during the month preceding the reenactment, the superintendent, historians, and other employees devoted most of their time to the affair. Preparations included the construction of a stand, an enclosure for invited guests, six latrines, two enclosures for the press, two structures to represent bombproofs, temporary imitation earthworks and battery positions and screens to hide the Crater house. Pains-taking care was taken to make the scene appear as realistic as possible, and unspoiled by modern intrusion. Monuments on the field were camouflaged, and arrangements were made to prohibit airplanes from flying over the area during the day. Camps were erected for the V.M.I. Cadets, participants in the reenactment by the CCC. The reenactment also required the painting of 214 signs, many of which were lettered on both sides.

Weekly meetings of the local committee for the reenactment were attended by Superintendent Coleman, Junior Historian Voorhis, and Project Supervisor Colston. Meetings were also held with officers in charge of the Marines, V.M.I. Cadets, and National Guardsmen, a total of nearly 3,000 troops who were to participate. This necessitated a detailed field study and conferences with Colonel C.J. Miller, USMC, the grand marshal of troops, by the park staff assisted by Acting Assistant Director Branch Spalding.

An estimated 50,000 were on hand on April 30, 1937, to witness the reenactment, which was staged on the Crater battlefield. Congressman Drewry made the opening address and introduced several of the prominent guests, including Virginia's Governor George C. Perry, who spoke briefly. Dr. Douglas S. Freeman made an explanatory talk of the military situation on July 30, 1864, and pointed out landmarks of the battlefield. Aided by a telephone system laid on the battlefield, the events and narration of the program worked out perfectly, and much to the relief of all concerned the mine explosion scheduled for 12:05 occurred exactly on time. Considerable difficulty was experienced in removing the spectators from the scene of that phase of the program to that of the afternoon phase, but the transfer was completed in time. Medical facilities had been established, but fortunately there were no accidents, and the entire crowd was gone within an hour and a half after the program ended. During the reenactment, a cordon of guards from the CCC camps at Swift Creek maintained order and kept the spectators from moving onto the battlefield. Traffic on the highway adjacent to the park was handled by the Virginia State Police, assisted by CCC enrollees and park foremen.<sup>9</sup>

A number of Confederate veterans were spectators and special guests of honor, but there were only four who had, 73 years before, taken a part in the battle: Francis Marion Ridout, age 93, of Petersburg; D.W. Swink and Theodore N. Mayo of Norfolk; and George W. Harris of Dinwiddie County, Virginia. Invitations were sent to Union survivors, but all declined because of their advanced age.<sup>10</sup>

Park officials felt the reenactment was successful and were especially pleased that very little damage had been done to the grounds, which had been drenched by the rains shortly before the event. Franklin W. Smith, president of the Petersburg Battlefield Park Association, believed "it was one of the greatest things ever held in Petersburg." Two days later, the Progress-Index reported that General Homer T. Atkinson "has not gotten over his thrill of witnessing the reenactment."<sup>11</sup>

#### Park Museum

When the Crater property was acquired by the Federal Government in 1936, the former club house of the Crater Battlefield Association was converted into a residence for the park superintendent. A small room on the north end of the building with a separate entrance was reserved for the museum and information station. With the acquired property came the old Griffith collection of battlefield recoveries, supplemented by articles found in the 1926 re-excavation of the Union mine tunnel. Other items were added at various times, largely articles found in the progress of developing the property.

In time, additional displays included a number of attractive water colors, pastels, and charcoal illustrations done under a Works Progress Administration art project sponsored by the park in 1937. These illustra-

tions depicted uniforms, battle scenes, and maps of battlefield areas around Petersburg and Richmond.<sup>12</sup>

A ten cent admission charge to the museum, put into effect in April 1939, drew many protests from local citizens and visitors. Reminiscent of the South Carolina veteran who visited the Crater about 1900 was the visit on September 23, 1939, of a Union veteran, R.E. Mansfield, of Yakima, Washington. In August he had attended the Encampment of the Grand Army of the Republic at Pittsburgh. The old veteran declared that it was a "dirty gyp," and that "if the Federal Government can't afford to keep such shrines as this open to the public without charge, we have come to a sorry pass. Not because of the 10¢ but because of the principle involved, my wife and I won't go in the museum." The admission fee was abolished within the following year.<sup>13</sup>

Museum interpretive facilities were improved in December 1939 with the installation of an eleven-foot-square relief map of the area covered by the siege of Petersburg. Built under the supervision of Junior Historian Raleigh C. Taylor, this map was extensively used for orientation talks and military narratives until July 1954, when it was replaced by an electric map designed to serve the same general purpose. The latter map, five feet wide and four feet high (wall-type), was the outgrowth of recommendations made by Ned J. Burns, chief of the Museum Branch, following an inspection of the park museum in February 1952. The worn condition of the relief map, the space factor, and the impracticality of repairing and electrifying the relief map were determining factors in the decision to construct a new unit. Data for the 24-switch-controlled electric map were assembled by the park historians with construction by technicians of the Museum Laboratory in Washington. The relief map was removed to the Centre

Hill Mansion Museum, where it was set up in the basement for continued public use. It has since been removed to Richard Bland College.

Interpretation at the Crater was improved in August 1948, when an amplifier, microphone, and record player were installed in the museum with a loudspeaker unit mounted in a tree top at the Crater. With this apparatus a six-minute recorded narration of the Battle of the Crater could be given to visitors at the Crater, while the museum attendant, operating the machine from the museum, would be free to serve visitors upon their arrival in the museum. The system was in long continuous service, except for one brief interruption when it was put out of commission temporarily by Hurricane Hazel in October 1954.

The most significant improvement in the park interpretive program came in 1955 when the Crater house, formerly the superintendent's residence, was converted into a visitor center. Since the acquisition of the Crater in 1936, the museum space had been confined to a small room, 22' by 21', on the north end of the house nearest the Crater. Although interpretive facilities and museum exhibits had been improved to a great extent by 1954, the museum was still inadequate for park interpretive needs. The museum room could scarcely accommodate the crowd of visitors on Saturday and Sunday afternoons, or large tour groups. Its exhibits of battlefield artifacts and other material were still antiquated in spite of numerous minor improvements.

The plan for the building conversion began to take shape in late 1952. Plans for the museum expansion developed slowly and painstakingly and were kept secret until it was officially assured that the project would materialize. Details of the project were carefully worked out and put on paper at a meeting held at the Crater on November 30, 1954. Those attend-

ing were Chief of Museum Branch Frank Buffmire, Chief Historian Herbert E. Kahler, Regional Historian James W. Holland, Superintendent Floyd B. Taylor, and Park Historian Lee A. Wallace, Jr. At this meeting the floor plan for the new exhibits to be installed and othe physical changes were worked out. In January 1955 the park historian spent almost the entire month working with the Museum Branch in Washington on the preparation of exhibit layouts. Exhibits were constructed by Museum Laboratory technicians during the summer.

Meanwhile, on June 20, 1955, the superintendent moved from the Crater house into a remodeled CCC building in the Fort Stedman area of the park. Interior work was now begun in earnest toward converting the house at the Crater to its new use. All park offices were moved into the building on July 27. Soon afterward work on constructing the housing for the museum exhibit cases was commenced. This work had just been completed when members of the Museum Branch arrived with the exhibits on August 29. It took a week to install the exhibits for the first time. In early 1956, the old museum was redecorated and converted into an orientation room. It was equipped with panel-type wall exhibits and one case exhibit, the electric map and chairs to accomodate 50 persons. The museum project from the very beginning received excellent publicity, with photographs, in the Petersburg and Richmond newspapers. A few days in advance of the opening Superintendent Floyd B. Taylor appeared on a television program in Petersburg's then newly opened station WXEX-TV and spoke of the new developments in the park, and the cameras presented the viewers a picture of the Crater house.<sup>14</sup>

## Chapter Ten

### Historical-Educational and Interpretive Programs, 1933-1935

Under the Civil Works Administration program for the Petersburg National Military Park a historical-educational staff was set up in the fall of 1933. Office space for the staff of eleven was located on the second floor of the McKenney Library in Petersburg, the provision for which was made through the courtesy of Miss Theresa Hodges, librarian there for many years. In October 1934, the office was moved to the McGee building on East Tabb Street, where a number of public offices were located. Later, in 1935, the office was moved again, back into the library, but in much less spacious accommodations. Finally, with the expiration of the program, the remaining historians moved into the superintendent's office in the old Post Office Building at the corner of Union and West Tabb streets.<sup>1</sup>

At the head of the staff was Historical Technician Branch Spalding, who in addition supervised the work of similar staffs at Richmond, Fredericksburg, and Guilford Courthouse National Military Park, North Carolina. As time permitted, he made a study of the fortifications around Petersburg, and was often accompanied on his field trips by Carter R. Bishop, Confederate veteran and park commissioner, whose knowledge of the battlefields was of much benefit to the historians in the early years of the park. Not the least interesting of Spalding's activities was the project on April 19, 1934, when he supervised a search in Blandford Cemetery for the remains of British General William Phillips, who died at Bollingbrook in Petersburg on May 13, 1781. An old skeleton was found, but there were no buttons or other objects to identify it as being the remains of the gen-

eral. Spalding, an A. E. F. veteran of World War I who received his master's degree from the University of Virginia in 1931, entered the National Park Service in 1933. Within a few years he would be the coordinating superintendent for all of the Virginia Civil War areas.<sup>2</sup>

The staff was divided into two sections, but the work was not strictly confined to the period as indicated by the designation of their respective divisions. The Revolutionary War division, under the direction of Manning C. Voorhis, consisted of Oscar F. Northington, Jr., and Raleigh C. Taylor, all professional historians with outstanding National Park Service careers ahead of them. Their work largely entailed studies of the operations of the British army in Virginia during the Revolution. Among their accomplishments was an extensive bibliography on the capture of Petersburg in 1781, which was prepared with the aid of Miss Lee Boot, research assistant for the staff.

The Civil War section included Edward Steere, a veteran of four years service in France with the Canadian Royal Horse Artillery, who earned a master's degree from the University of Texas in 1929.<sup>3</sup> Assisted by Miss Elizabeth Adkins, research assistant, he prepared a study of the attack on Fort Stedman March 25, 1865. Steere's other projects included a report on the battle of Five Forks and the operations to Appomattox, which was prepared for the Washington Office with the aid of Miss Elizabeth Powell, research assistant. Another of this section was Edward A. Wyatt, IV, of Petersburg, who was a graduate of Randolph-Macon College in Ashland, Virginia, and the future editor, for many years, of the Petersburg Progress-Index.<sup>4</sup> His earliest project was a study of the events at Petersburg on June 15-18, 1864. Later he made a beneficial study of local building sites, plantations, and other geographical points of historical signifi-

cance. Another staff project was that of interviewing, by Research Assistant Elizabeth Adkins, the few remaining Civil War veterans and the local citizens who remembered the war and recording their recollections. In many of their projects, both divisions of the staff worked closely with the Petersburg chapters of the Daughters of the American Revolution and the United Daughters of the Confederacy.<sup>5</sup>

Spalding and his staff also engaged in public contact work, speaking before local civic and patriotic organizations and conducting tours. School tour groups were encouraged, and the earliest recorded visit from a school was January 31, 1934, when 30 students and two teachers from Norfolk visited the park. In the early years of the park, facilities were not adequate for handling random visitors in large numbers. The roads were not complete, there were no buildings such as a central orientation site or museum, rest rooms, etc., nor was there a regular park entrance. It was thought better at this time, until these facilities could be developed, to devote more attention to the organized groups visiting the park.

In 1935, although work in developing the park was proceeding at a steady, but perhaps at an outwardly slow, pace, the Progress-Index voiced its concern:

In spite of its comparative newness, it is a fact that similar parks still more recently created have made much greater progress, and this in spite of the fact that impartial students concede that the Petersburg park has interests more varied and more important than those of any other. It is sorely in need of a museum, headquarters, guide stations, and other structures. With all the millions of dollars being poured out at this time by the Federal government, surely we should be able to obtain funds for these comparatively modest requirements. If the end of the spending era finds the Petersburg National Military Park uncompleted, then we will see a still slower rate of progress, for we will have missed our real opportunity.<sup>6</sup>

Model Shop

A shop for the construction of models and other interpretive devices was established in January 1934 in a space over a shop at 128 North Market Street in Petersburg. Francis Powell and William C. Flake, members of the historical-educational staff, were in charge of the shop, which was set up at an initial cost of \$601.<sup>7</sup> Among their outstanding accomplishments were models of Fort Fisher, the Union mine tunnel, and a relief map of the Petersburg National Military Park area.<sup>8</sup>

## Chapter Eleven

### Interpretive Markers, Outdoor Exhibits, and Self-Guiding Tours

Along the tour route in 1938, visitors were aided by narrative and site markers, outdoor maps, and displays of photographs. There were 30 approximately 100-word markers placed at strategic points. The large narrative markers of semi-permanent construction were made of brown masonite on which the inscription was lettered with yellow paint. Neatly installed in a two-post upright frame of cedar or cypress, these markers were the adopted style for all Civil War areas in Virginia for many years. The design had been approved in 1937. Smaller signs of the same color scheme were also used, and 20 route markers were placed along the tour route. By October 1939 there were 35 100-word markers and slightly more than 20 route markers. Ten outdoor maps of temporary construction were placed at Battery Five, Battery Eight, Fort Stedman, and the Crater by the end of 1939.

Significant progress was made in the interpretive tour development plan in 1948, when metal shield "Park Tour" signs were erected along the tour route in the eastern section of the park. Permits were obtained from the city of Petersburg and from the state to place the tour route markers on property outside park boundaries.

In February 1948 an experimental aluminum-frame glass-front outdoor exhibit case was placed beside Siege Road, in front of Fort Stedman. The all-metal case, designed by Park Ranger Melvin Proffitt, had proven of such durability that by May 1954 five of these cases were installed in the park in the following order:

Battle of Fort Stedman (experimental case) at Fort Stedman,  
February 1948.

Battle of Petersburg, June 15-18, 1864; at Battery Five, March 1949.

Battle of Petersburg, June 15-18, 1864; at Battery Nine, March 1949.

Battle of Petersburg, June 15-19, 1864; at Colquitt's Salient, March 1949.

Battle of the Crater; at the Crater, May 1949.

In December 1950, an exhibit case containing a halftone painting of the Union mine explosion July 30, 1864, was placed on Siege Road about 800 yards directly east of the Crater. The exhibit at Battery Five was redesigned in 1952 to include the information contained in the exhibit at Battery Nine. The case frame was removed from Battery Nine to Fort Davis. A pictorial map of the Petersburg Campaign indicating the Park Tour Route was placed in the Fort Davis exhibit case. In August 1953, the seventh case was installed in the park. This one, at Fort Wadsworth, contained battle maps of the Battle of the Weldon Railroad, August 18-21, 1864.

The all-metal outdoor trailside exhibit case proved durable and was adopted in some of the other park areas. Each unit of this type was fabricated by Hankins & Johann, Inc., Staples Mill Road, Richmond, Virginia, the most recent unit costing \$213 (1953) complete with free leaflet box installed on post.

On December 27, 1949, a special ceremony was held at the park headquarters, then in the Post Office Building, honoring Ranger Proffitt for his suggestion on the use of metal in place of wood for trailside exhibit cases. Ranger Proffitt was the recipient of a certificate of honorable mention and a \$10 cash award. Because of the adoption of the all-metal exhibit cases by other parks, he received a \$100 supplementary award in 1956.

Each trailside exhibit case contains an attractive exhibit painted in oils on flexboard by Sidney King, Central Point, Virginia. Exhibits for the first five cases erected in the park were designed by Park Historian Richard Wayne Lykes and the remaining two exhibits by Park Historian Lee A. Wallace, Jr. Financial assistance on some of the exhibits was given by the Eastern National Park & Monument Association. Invaluable assistance was received from Messrs. James W. Holland and J. Paul Hudson, historian and museum administrator, respectively, of the Region One office.

The first of the permanent markers were installed in the park in December 1949, chiefly in the Crater area. The contract for these markers had been let to Sewah Studios, Marietta, Ohio, in June of the same year. This type of marker has a natural green background with patina green lettering, which blends in with the surrounding terrain. These units are also made on a design approved by the Service.

An outdoor exhibit which developed into one of the park's major attractions had its beginnings in the fall of 1935. This was a plaster and lath replica of the celebrated 13-inch seacoast mortar, "The Dictator," constructed for exhibit at the Southside Virginia Fair. It was the work of Francis Powell, who was made available to the park for modeling, drafting, and art work through the Federal Emergency Relief Agency. In the fall of 1935, the model was remounted at Battery Five on the site occupied by the original during the siege. Later, a concrete model was cast by CCC enrollees and mounted in the fall of 1936 to replace the plaster and lath model. The reproduction concrete model and its bed, a considerable undertaking largely accomplished under the supervision of Junior Historian Manning C. Voorhis, was a significant step in the inter-

pretation of the role of artillery at Petersburg. The restoration of the outward appearance of the nearby magazine was completed in January 1938 under the guidance of Junior Park Historian Raleigh C. Taylor.<sup>1</sup>

Another popular ordnance exhibit was installed after World War II at the Crater. Some 18 pieces of artillery, ranging from a Coehorn mortar to a 32-pounder naval gun, were put on display. Included in the exhibit was a 12-pounder breech-loading Whitworth rifle, a 12-pounder mountain howitzer, and others that well illustrated the variety of ordnance in use during the Civil War.

A 30-pounder Parrott rifle was mounted February 11, 1954, at Battery Five, where a battery of these guns was served by the First Connecticut Heavy Artillery after the position had been rebuilt as Union Battery IV. Some nails from the original platform were found during the process of reconstructing the new platform of pressurized and creosoted oak boards. At the same time, a new platform of this material was laid for "The Dictator."<sup>2</sup>

In 1954, self-guiding tours of two sites within the park were put into operation, Fort Wadsworth and Battery Five. Copies of the original plan of Fort Wadsworth drawn by Union Army engineers were obtained from the National Archives. By these plans, the sites of bombproof quarters, gun positions, and other features of the fort could be easily identified. As the work of clearing the site of excess vegetation progressed, some remarkably well preserved features of the fort were revealed. By early May 1954, Fort Wadsworth was cleared of the last remaining brush piles, and the last of the interpretive markers and two light field guns were placed in the fort.

Simultaneously with the work on Fort Wadsworth, Historian Herbert Olsen was preparing a history of Poplar Grove National Cemetery. Inquiries on certain aspects of the cemetery history had been frequent in the past and a comprehensive history of the cemetery with a means of readily locating graves seemed to justify a major project. In addition to the history of the cemetery, an index card file of known dead, alphabetically arranged, was made and maps indicating grave sites, walks, the rostrum, and other features of the cemetery were prepared. Copies of the history, index, and maps were placed at the cemetery and at the park museum where they have since proved of immense interest and value to visitors.

The public was invited, through newspaper publicity articles on the two concurrent projects, to visit Fort Wadsworth and Poplar Grove National Cemetery on Memorial Day 1954, at which time personnel would be on duty at both places to render additional interpretive services for that day. Historian Olsen and Wallace were on duty at the cemetery and Fort Wadsworth respectively.

On Sunday, June 6, 1954, the self-guiding tour of Battery Five was formally opened. Mimeographed sheets with information on the area to correspond with numbered stakes on the ground were prepared for the footpaths and for the road which encircles the area. This road, constructed in the early development of the area, had been closed for several years. Private land acquisition and repeated aggressive attempts on the part of business interests in the vicinity of the main gate to Fort Lee Military Reservation to obtain park land for personal use under any plan whatsoever forced an "on-site" reversal of planning for this area of the park. Instead of allowing private development to close entirely the

one-time "horse-shoe" drive about Battery Five, the new plan would make it a "Loop Drive," with only one access onto State Route 36 (Hopewell Road) instead of two. The reopening of the drive facilitated interpretation of the area and made it once again one of the very popular and historically scenic sections of the entire park. Among those who made the first drive over the reopened road was Major Joseph Mills Hanson, who as historical technician at Petersburg, 1939-1942, did much of the historical research on the Battery Five area.<sup>3</sup>

#### Artillery Park Project, 1936-1942

In April 1936, plans to establish an ordnance museum, or artillery park, at Petersburg were formulated by officials of the National Park Service and the Army Ordnance Association. It was proposed to place this display of Civil War period ordnance at the site of Meade's Station. The association formed a committee of seven to assist in the locating of artillery pieces and having them removed to Petersburg. This committee consisted of the following association members: Brigadier General Benedict Crowell, president of the association; Brigadier John Ross Delafield, Ordnance Reserve Association counsel; Lieutenant Colonel LeRoy Hodges, ordnance officer, Virginia National Guard; Lieutenant Colonel Calvin Goddard, originator of forensic ballistics; Stephen V. Grancsy, curator of arms, Metropolitan Museum of Art; F.W. Foster Gleason, student of Confederate ordnance; Claud E. Fuller, writer and collector of arms; and Major L.A. Codd, executive secretary of the association. Three National Park Service officials served in an advisory capacity: Director Arno B. Cammerer, Superintendent J. Walter Coleman, and Acting Assistant Director Branch Spalding, Branch of Historic Sites and Buildings.<sup>4</sup>

An article outlining the project which appeared in Army Ordnance, January-February 1937, made an appeal for information on the location of artillery pieces and expressed hope that ready and willing donors of suitable pieces could be found, as neither the association nor the National Park Service had funds for the purchasing of guns. Park officials undertook a study of Civil War artillery and compiled invaluable notes and records. Progress in the collecting of the guns developed slowly, and it was not until October 1938 that the first artillery pieces arrived. These were twelve guns declared excess to the needs of Gettysburg National Military Park. Results of the appeal for guns through Army Ordnance proved nil, and in early 1939 National Park Service officials undertook to spur the artillery project into action by granting Lieutenant Colonel Calvin Goddard's temporary appointment (three months) as ranger-historian to make a survey of ordnance needs for the project. Colonel Goddard entered on duty on June 26, 1939. A survey was made of available guns at Watervliet Arsenal, Raritan Arsenal, Rock Island, the U.S Military Academy at West Point, and other Government installations. Colonel Goddard visited several of these installations in August 1939. Gun barrels began to arrive soon after the termination of Colonel Goddard's appointment on October 25, 1939. Two bronze 12-pounder Napoleons with iron replica carriages were transferred to the park from Moores Creek National Military Park and placed on display at the Crater and Fort Stedman where they created considerable interest among visitors. By April 1940, 113 pieces of ordnance had been received. Sixty-one gun tubes were placed on display, unmounted, at Fort Stedman. In October 1942, at the time of the scrap metal drive, a complaint that suitable material for the drive was lying

idle was made to the local chairman, who submitted it to the Regional Office. As a result, the gun barrels were removed from display and concealed under debris where they remained until after the war, when 16 of the tubes were displayed at the Crater. The "burial of the guns" in 1942 for all practical purposes marked the end of the artillery park project. Even though the entire project never materialized, it resulted in the accumulation of some very fine specimens of ordnance, which have been made available for study.

#### Woodworking Shop

In June 1938, a woodworking shop was completed at CCC Camp MP-2, located in the park. Within a short time the shop had turned out colonial-style tables and bookcases for the contact stations at Battery Five and for Cold Harbor at Richmond National Battlefield Park. It was anticipated that other furniture, picture frames, and gun carriages would be among the future products of the shop.<sup>5</sup>

## Chapter Twelve

### Interpretive Services and Visitation

Visitors to the park were comparatively few before 1936. Park interpretive facilities and visitor accommodations were still in their infancy when only 1,924 visitors were contacted in 1935. In September 1935 the Petersburg Progress-Index was distressed when it compared the figures of the number of visitors to the park at Petersburg with those at Fredericksburg, "...which has as its able head, Branch Spalding, formerly associated with the local park. In the Fredericksburg park this summer the average number of daily visitors has been 180; the corresponding Petersburg figure is five."<sup>1</sup>

Park visitation reached a high in 1936, when 29,314 persons received contact services. In that year a guide system for the park was established with the cooperation of the city of Petersburg, the Chamber of Commerce, and the Civilian Conservation Corps. Two contact stations for Works Progress Administration guides were constructed by the city. One of the stations was erected on the western end of Washington Street, and the other at the foot of the Appomattox River bridge, in Petersburg. Guides were located in the office of the Petersburg Chamber of Commerce and at three stations in the park, Battery Five, Fort Stedman, and Fort Davis. Members of the historical staff developed a series of illustrated lectures for use in conducting special tours and also assisted in the training of guides. Free guide service was maintained for individual parties daily between the hours of 8:30 a.m. and 7:00 p.m. during the heavy travel season of the year. Superintendent Coleman estimated in

June 1936 that nearly 200 persons daily were utilizing this service. They came chiefly in private cars and in small parties.

To meet the demand of increasing visitation, the number of guides was increased, and in 1937 there were four men of the WPA and six CCC men serving as guides. Figures for July 1937 show that 5,943 visitors were contacted. The increase in visitation for 1937 was attributed to the publicity given on the reenactment of the Battle of the Crater in April of that year.

Battery Five was selected as the starting point for the tour of the park, and guides were placed there to meet the visitor. In July 1937, 2152 visitors were contacted at the Battery Five station. A small attractive building of colonial design was opened there on July 28, 1937, to serve as a field museum and guide station. The building was constructed entirely by CCC labor with only limited supervisory assistance. A parking area was constructed adjacent to the contact station. During World War II, due to the shortage of interpretive personnel, it was often necessary to close this station. The building remained in use until 1948, when it was removed to the Utility Area to serve as a storage house.

Superintendent Northington reported 223,063 park visitors during fiscal year 1939, excluding 4,696 picnickers and 981 horseback riders. Of this number, 31,698 received personnel instruction from members of the guide staff. The staff was composed of two technician helpers and six CCC enrollees. On weekends during the summer and on holidays the regular guide staff was sometimes assisted by the superintendent and junior research technician. WPA guides were employed at the two contact stations in Petersburg.<sup>2</sup>

A total of 135,030 visitors came to the park during the 1943 fiscal year, the first year without the assistance of the CCC guides, which placed the burden of interpretive services largely on the superintendent, park ranger, and junior historical technician. Although interpretive services were not as well emphasized as in the past, the fiscal year was rated as one of the best insofar as visitation was concerned. Of the visitors, 116,776 were members of the armed forces. There were 71,962 interpretive contacts, of which 52,424 were given formal talks at 322 meetings, and 19,438 were registered at the museum.

Following is a tabulation of park visitation 1937 - 1955:

1937 .....	60,217	1947 .....	138,549
1938 .....	150,486	1948 .....	124,755
1939 .....	192,246	1949 .....	166,903
1940 .....	183,191	1950 .....	203,971
1941 .....	263,169	1951 .....	189,165
1942 .....	212,167	1952 .....	198,136
1943 .....	113,168	*Oct. - Dec. '52 ..	47,231
1944 .....	91,561	1953 .....	223,768
1945 .....	131,059	1954 .....	206,864
1946 .....	146,019	1955 .....	214,836

The figure for 1937 excludes the thousands who attended the Battle of the Crater reenactment of April 30. Increases in park visitation preceding 1944 can largely be attributed to the publicity given the park in newspapers, magazines, radio talks, and other media, and improved interpretive service within the park. Members of the armed forces constituted a large percentage of the total visitation during the years of World War II, chiefly from nearby Camp Lee. Gasoline rationing and other travel restrictions were undoubtedly responsible for the drop in visitation for 1943-1944. Decrease in civilian travel was apparent in 1944,

\*The "Travel Year" was originally based on the period October 1-September 30 of each year. The Calendar Year basis started with the year 1953.

when it was estimated that almost three-fourths of the total visitors were members of the armed forces. Civilian travel showed a decided increase by 1947, while there was a large decrease in military visitation from the reduction of training activities at Camp Lee.<sup>3</sup>

#### Special Interest Park Tours and Visitors

Conspicuous among the tour groups which visited the park in the years before World War II were the annual tours by the Army War College classes which visited the park from 1937 through 1939. The groups averaged about 100 officers equipped with maps and mimeographed outlined studies of the siege of Petersburg. An entire day was usually spent at Petersburg, beginning at Battery Five and ending at Five Forks, with lectures given at Fort Stedman, the Crater, and other key points enroute.

A group of British army officers stationed in Bermuda visited the park on November 2-3, 1937, as a part of their prescribed tour and study of the Virginia Civil War battlefields. These officers, representing varied branches of the British army, were conducted over the battlefields by National Park Service personnel. Visits of foreign army officers, especially in groups, were not common in the years preceding World War II.

On March 30-31, 1940, 25 business and professional men of Washington, D.C., styled the "Battlefield Crackpates," visited the park. These men were Civil War enthusiasts and made battlefield tours about twice a year, such as the Civil War Roundtables were to do in later years. On their visit to Petersburg the "Crackpates" were conducted over the battlefields by Coordinating Superintendent Branch Spalding and Major Joseph Mills Hanson, assistant historical technician at Petersburg.

In May 1953, a meeting was held in Richmond of the Civil War Roundtables from Chicago, Washington, and other cities with the Richmond Civil War Roundtable as host. On May 9, this group of about a hundred persons toured the Richmond battlefields, and on May 10 it spent the entire day touring the fields around Petersburg from Battery Five to Five Forks. Portable amplifying apparatus was furnished for the occasion by Fort Lee through the courtesy of Major General Howard L. Peckham, a student of Civil War history and post commander at the time.

On every other Saturday from January 1953 through January 1954, groups from the Leadership School, Medical Replacement Training Center, Camp Pickett, Virginia, visited the park. Their visits were a part of the school program which included a study of leadership in the war of Petersburg.

Military groups which have continued to make periodic trips to the park as a part of their course are the ROTC cadets in summer training at Fort Lee and cadets from the United States Military Academy, who visit the quartermaster installation at Fort Lee each year.

On September 16, 1956, the Petersburg Civil War Roundtable sponsored a 55-mile tour of a portion of the route covered by Hampton's Cattle Raid, September 14-16, 1964. Approximately 125 persons participated on the tour which left from the Crater. Walter T. McCandlish, secretary of the Petersburg Battlefield Museum Corporation, was largely responsible for mapping out the tour, and Major Joseph Mills Hanson, author of a splendid account of the raid which first appeared in 1943, assisted in the narrations at points of interest along the route.

Since its establishment, there have been many individuals of prominence in various fields of endeavor who have visited the park, far too numerous for even the briefest mention here. But of particular interest are some of the visitors of military importance, and the last survivors of those who participated in the siege of Petersburg. The last known Union survivor of the siege to visit the park was Charles L. Chapel, on June 25, 1938. He visited Battery Five and was shown over the park area. Chapel enlisted August 23, 1864, in Co. D, 10th New York Infantry, which was in Mott's Division, II Army Corps, and served at Petersburg from September 1864 until the end of the siege. He died in the Naval Hospital at Long Beach, California, September 19, 1949, at the age of 102. Chapel was not, however, the last Union veteran to visit the park.

The distinction goes to R. E. Mansfield, who came in September 1939, and refused, as a matter of principle, to pay the ten cent admission charge to the park museum. He was a delegate from the State of Washington to the Grand Army of the Republic Encampment, but we have no record of his war service. The last surviving Confederate veteran of the siege of Petersburg to visit the park is believed to have been Homer T. Atkinson of Petersburg, who died on March 31, 1945, as the last survivor of the Battle of the Ninth of June 1864 and the defense of Fort Gregg, April 2, 1865. Long associated with the park's development, he probably made occasional but unrecorded visits during his last years. Theodore Norman Mayo of Norfolk, Virginia, is believed to have been the last Confederate survivor of the Battle of the Crater when he died on October 11, 1948, at the age of 103. He served with Co. C, 26th Regiment Virginia Infantry, and was present at the 1937 reenactment of the Battle of the Crater.

On one of his frequent trips to the Virginia battlefield, Dr. Douglas S. Freeman visited Petersburg on April 18, 1940. It was not, of course, his first visit to the park by any means. On this occasion he was accompanied by a photographer and writer for Life magazine, and the background material obtained at Petersburg appeared as a feature article on the eminent historian and biographer in the May 13, 1940, issue of Life.

Ten days after Dr. Freeman's visit, on April 28, 1940, his friend General George C. Marshall, Chief of Staff, United States Army, drove down from Washington to Petersburg with his wife and visited the Crater.<sup>4</sup>

Visits by persons of military renown have been numerous, but of particular interest are those who came to the park after the close of World War II. Among them:

April 10, 1946 - General and Mrs. Dwight D. Eisenhower, who were accompanied by Major General George A. Horken, Assistant Quartermaster General, and Mrs. Horken.

February 14, 1946 - Eleven U.S. Army officers, all of whom had been prisoners of the Japanese since the fall of Bataan and Corregidor, were conducted over the park by the superintendent.

April 4, 1950 - Lieutenant General and Mrs. Matthew B. Ridgway, who were accompanied by Major General Roy C. L. Graham, commanding Fort Lee, Virginia.

May 23, 1952 - Brigadier General Louis Jean Salaum, commanding general of the French army's transportation school; and Brigadier General Pierre Henri Nogues, commanding general of the French army's Transportation Corps.

July 9, 1952 - General Henri Navarre, who at the time of his visit was deputy commander of the French occupation forces in Germany, and who later commanded the French forces in Indo-China.

January 29, 1953 - Five members of the Royal Greek Army General Staff, Major Generals Constantine Katsoridis, Pan. Spanos, Milt. Nicolsou, S. Petropoulos, and Lambires.

January 17, 1954 - Lieutenant General Anton Von Bechtolsheim, German Corps Commander on the Russian front during World War II. His visit to the Crater recalled 1918, when he was in charge of mining operations against the French on the Western Front.

March 23, 1956 - Mr. George H. Roderick, Assistant Secretary of the Army for Civil and Military Affairs, visited the museum, Crater, Fort Stedman, and Battery Five, in company with Major General Ira K. Evans, commanding general of the Quartermaster Training Command, Fort Lee, Virginia.

February 9, 1957 - Lieutenant General Frido Von Sengen und Etterlin, commander of the German forces at Cassino, Italy, in World War II.

#### Park Literature

The first official informational literature printed for free public distribution appeared around 1935. It consisted of a single folded sheet with a sketch drawn from the 1867 Michler map, showing the Petersburg lines, and indicated Government-owned property in shading. On the reverse side was a brief sketch of the siege of Petersburg, a sketch of the Revolutionary War events at Petersburg, and a paragraph on "How to See the Park.

In February 1938, a new informational sheet was made available. This was a considerable improvement over the previous folder as a map showing modern roads and the park tour route was substituted for the old map. A revised edition of this information sheet appeared in April 1941. In May 1941, the park received 20,000 new two-fold leaflets, which were acclaimed by the superintendent as the most satisfactory printed material for general distribution that had thus far appeared at the park. This was the first of the type of leaflets containing photographs, maps, and text now used in the park. Since the appearance of the first twofold leaflets it has undergone various minor revisions. It was entirely revised in 1954 and further improved the following year.

A 16-page illustrated booklet was prepared for the park and first placed on sale in 1941 at the price of 15c per copy. Ten years later the 16-page booklet was replaced by Petersburg Battlefields, National Park

Service Historical Handbook Series No. 13, prepared in 1950 by Park Historian Richard Wayne Lykes. Petersburg Battlefields was revised and brought up to date in 1956. The initial price of Petersburg Battlefields, with a mailing envelope, was 35c per copy. At the next printing of the handbook, the envelope was not included, and the price was reduced to 30c. The price was further reduced to 25c per copy when the handbook was revised in 1956.

The Eastern National Park & Monument Association, a non-profit organization composed chiefly of National Park Service employees who contributed funds for its establishment, set up an agency in the park in 1948. All profits from the sale of park literature, post cards, etc., are used to improve the interpretive program and facilities in parks which otherwise could not be provided through the annual allotment of funds. The park has received a number of generous donations from the association, including funds for a library table and six chairs, \$191.00; 54 chairs for the orientation room, \$260.52; and volumes for the park library, \$94.86.

Post cards were placed on sale for the first time in the history of the park in 1952. A post card vending machine was purchased for the park by the Eastern National Park & Monument Association for \$65.00. The original set of cards sold at the park were views of the Dictator, the Crater, Battery Eight, Fort Stedman, the park entrance, and Elder's painting of the Battle of the Crater. The cards were arranged in sets of three each which sold for 10c per set. In 1955, a view of Fort Wadsworth was substituted for the park entrance card, and a new copy was made of Elder's Battle of the Crater, this one from the original painting now in the Commonwealth Club, Richmond, Virginia. The previous card was made

from an enlarged photograph (colored) of the original painting.

#### Radio and Television Programs

Radio broadcasts by members of the park staff were made over the Petersburg and Richmond stations. A number were given in April 1937 by Junior Historian Raleigh C. Taylor, and from the first of October of that year to October 1940, 13 broadcasts were made. The last use of radio by the park appears to have been in March 1949 in observance of the Department of the Interior's 100th anniversary. Local residents no doubt were inspired by these broadcasts to visit the park.

Although Superintendent Floyd B. Taylor had appeared previously on a local Chamber of Commerce TV program representing the Petersburg National Military Park, the first televised program devoted entirely to the park was presented on Monday, April 23, 1956, when the entire park staff appeared on a 15-minute program with the serial title of "The Old Dominion." The theme of the park presentation was the operation of the park and the functions of its personnel rather than a descriptive or historical account of the park. Those appearing were Park Superintendent Floyd B. Taylor, Park Historians Lee A. Wallace, Jr., and Howard L. Blick, Chief Clerk Kathryne L. Anthony, Ranger Melvin Proffitt, and the regular maintenance staff: Rudolph L. Blaha, Norris Field, and Charles L. French.

## Chapter Thirteen

### Petersburg National Military Park and World War II

In September 1939, concrete was being salvaged from the World War I buildings of Camp Lee that once stood within the old camp area which had been transferred to the park. This material was crushed and applied as surfacing to park roads then under construction. Demolition of these reminders of World War I was in progress when Hitler's army marched into Poland. The peaceful solitude that had existed over this area since the end of World War I was soon to be interrupted by the advent of another conflict. The building of a new Camp Lee and World War II were bound to affect the development of Petersburg National Military Park. By the time surveys were being made of the new cantonment in October 1940, steps had been taken in anticipation of problems that would obviously occur. The regular National Park Service staff and the CCC were alerted to the new situation that existed in the area. Cooperative and friendly relations were established between the park and army officers in charge of the construction at Camp Lee. Activity at Camp Lee began to have repercussions in the park in November 1940, when the quartermaster in charge requested permits to widen certain roads, erect temporary power lines, and construct water works reservoirs and facilities within the park area. The Secretary of Interior in December 1940 granted to the War Department a permit to use 100 acres of park property for the location of a hospital. An additional 500 acres of park land was granted under permit in June 1941 for the purpose of establishing a Quartermaster Training School.<sup>1</sup>

Because of the concentrated activity in the section of the park adjacent to Camp Lee, the roads in that area took considerable punishment. Arrangements were made whereby the army would assume responsibility for maintaining the roads in that section of the park. In October 1943, the superintendent reported that, with the aid of the army, the park was then in the best condition it had been since its establishment. Assistance from the army continued until 1947.<sup>2</sup>

As with other National Park Service areas located close to main highways, Petersburg National Military Park became in 1940 a bivouac area for transient troops. Accommodations provided by the park for the troops consisted of about ten acres of camping and parking spaces, water and wood. On March 26, 1940, some 900 officers and enlisted men of the 18th Engineer Regiment enroute from Fort Devens, Massachusetts, to Fort Benning, Georgia, encamped near Fort Stedman. The previous day, 30 enlisted men and officers of the 3rd U.S. Cavalry had encamped in the same area. Officers from both these units correctly predicted that more army units would stop overnight at Petersburg. Approximately 3,332 troops had bivouacked at the park by July 1941. One of the largest contingents of troops to visit the park was at noon on July 22, 1941, when about 1,500 officers and enlisted men from Camp Pendleton, Virginia, arrived at Petersburg for lunch and a visit to the Crater. The convoy of 250 vehicles, traveling in three sections, continued on to the A.P. Hill Military Reservation in Caroline County, the Skyline Drive, and on July 24 returned to bivouac on the park, where they were given talks on the siege of Petersburg by the park staff.<sup>3</sup> In the fall of 1942, an artillery battery from Camp Pendleton bivouacked on the park and was given a 34-mile tour of the Petersburg battlefields, accompanied by the

park historian, who gave them a running account of the siege with emphasis on the role of the artillery.<sup>4</sup>

In July 1942, the CCC camp which had been in operation since the summer of 1933 was closed down. Until the closing of the camp, the supervisory staff and enrollees had carried out the necessary work for the development, maintenance, and protection of the park. Project Superintendent John V. Colston was transferred to the Swift Creek Recreational Demonstration Area Project as project superintendent on January 2, 1941, and was succeeded by Norman A. Buckley. In August 1941, the CCC camp was assigned to the National Defense Program and a side camp of 25 enrollees was set up to operate in the park. In the last month of its existence the average strength of the camp was 139. Many of the enrollees obtained work in nearby defense projects almost immediately following the disbandment of the camp. An army unit from Camp Lee occupied the former CCC buildings from the winter of 1942 until October 1944.<sup>5</sup>

Military groups, chiefly from neighboring Camp Lee, continued to visit the park throughout the war. Each class of the Officers Candidate School sent candidates to the park for lectures. One of the lectures presented was "The Problem of Supply During the War Between the States," which included the background history of the Quartermaster Corps. The Quartermaster Replacement Training Center at Camp Lee used the park roads and trails extensively for marches and maneuvers. The troops were often met, usually by appointment, at points of interest by the park historian, who explained the significance of the area. Before the removal of the Medical Replacement Training Center from Camp Lee and Camp Pickett, lectures were given them on the siege and on the Medical Department during the Civil War.<sup>6</sup>

Despite the shortage of tires and the rationing of gasoline, park visitation by military personnel and civilians continued in such a number that in April 1942, Superintendent Oscar F. Northington, Jr., reported that with the decrease in the number of interpretive personnel, "If there were more visitors they could not be accommodated." Visitors in April 1942 were estimated at 22,489, an increase of 2,638 over the preceding month. Up until the closing of the CCC camp in July 1942, a number of the enrollees were utilized as guides. After that day the shortage of interpretive personnel necessitated at times the closing of the Battery Five contact station and the museum at the Crater. During the travel year of 1941-1942 (ending October 1, 1942), 118,013 service men visited the park, and 56,931 came from October 1 to May 1, 1943. During the period March 1, 1940, to May 18, 1943, lectures on the siege of Petersburg were given to 139,243 members of the armed services. Reduction in strength and in the training program at Camp Lee at the end of the war had its effect on the park's interpretive program, but still, in July 1946, out of the 11,969 who came to the park, service personnel accounted for 10,000.<sup>7</sup>

## Chapter Fourteen

### Historic Building Sites - Centre Hill Mansion

No buildings of Civil War date stand within the park. There are, however, visible above-ground brick remains of two in the Battery Five area, Whitehill, or the Friend house, and the Jordan house. Whitehill stood until 1923, but the original home of Josiah Jordan was pulled down during the war. Jordan rebuilt after the war, but on another site a short distance away. This house burned and he again rebuilt, on the site of the original house, and apparently utilized the old foundations.

More conspicuous are the brick foundations and chimney at Spring Garden, the old Taylor farm, some 800 yards directly east of the Crater. The original house, the birthplace of the celebrated Virginia Federalist leader George Keith Taylor in 1769, was according to local tradition burned during the American revolution. Spring Garden was the home of William Byrd Taylor when it burned during the summer of 1864. The ruins served as a reference point, or landmark, for the Union forces for the remainder of the war. The Taylors rebuilt after the war, and the tract remained in possession of the family until 1901. In October 1949, it was acquired by the Department of the Interior for inclusion in the park. In that year the postwar dwelling at Spring Garden was razed, but the brick foundations and central chimney was allowed to stand. With the thought these remains might be of prewar origin, the regional architect, Daniel Breslin, was called to inspect them. On January 29, 1954, he judged them to be from the first quarter of the 19th century, and it was then assumed that the postwar dwelling had been built on the foundation of the prewar Taylor house. Following his recommendations, immediate

steps were taken by the park in stabilizing the ruins. A concrete wash was placed on top of the wall to prevent water seepage, and the chimney was repaired with a concrete cap. Missing bricks were replaced and vines and other vegetation were removed from the site.<sup>1</sup>

Since then, in 1981, an archeological investigation has revealed the remains of a house some distance north of these ruins, along with evidence of a fire. This would mean, it appears, that the ruins previously interpreted as the Taylor house remains were more probably those of an outbuilding, a kitchen-quarters structure perhaps.

#### Centre Hill Mansion in Petersburg

Centre Hill Mansion has, fortunately, survived to stand as one of Petersburg's most elegant and historic structures. Exacly when this stately mansion was built is not clear, but in 1825 it was either built or enlarged by Robert Bolling, a wealthy land owner and proprietor of tobacco warehouses. In 1850, the mansion was remodeled by his son, Robert Buckner Bolling.<sup>2</sup>

Scars still remain from the shells which struck Centre Hill during the siege. After the surrender of the city, Union General George L. Hartsuff occupied the mansion about April 5, 1865, as his headquarters for the military district which included City Point and west to Sutherland Station on the Southside Railroad. On April 7, 1865, President Lincoln, on his second trip to the city, visited General Hartsuff at Centre Hill, and it was on this occasion that Lincoln is supposed to have remarked, when the matter of rent was mentioned, that "our batteries have made rent enough here already."<sup>3</sup>

In time, Centre Hill was again a private residence, and the mansion remained in the Bolling family until 1901, when it was acquired by Charles Hall Davis, well-known Petersburg attorney, who was the last owner to occupy it as a residence. It was when Centre Hill was the home of the Davises that it became the scene for one of the most gala events witnessed in Petersburg's history. This was on May 19, 1909, when President William Howard Taft came to the city for the dedication of the Pennsylvania monuments on the Fort Mahone site and at Fort Stedman. The President's visit to Centre Hill consisted of a reception in the spacious parlor of the mansion, and an alfresco luncheon on the south lawn in the afternoon. Addresses were delivered by President Taft, French Ambassador M. Jusserand, Ex-Governor of Virginia William E. Cameron of Petersburg, and Rear Admiral Charles D. Sigsbee, who had been captain of the battleship Maine. Aside from others of distinction among the guests, there were some on the committees appointed to arrange for the occasion who would have a role in the establishment of a battlefield park at Petersburg: Patrick H. Drewry, Francis R. Lassiter, Charles Hall Davis, Stith Bolling, Carter R. Bishop, and Homer T. Atkinson.<sup>4</sup>

In 1936, Centre Hill was acquired by Edgar S. Bowling of New York, who presented it as a gift to the National Park Service. A former resident of Petersburg and identified with the tobacco business for many years, he was a director of the P. Lorillard Tobacco Company.<sup>5</sup> Three years later, in 1939, an appropriation of \$5,000 was made for repairs to Centre Hill. An Emergency Relief Administration project was set up to bring an additional \$20,000 which was hoped to cover the complete repair of the house. In May and June 1939, repairs were made to the

mansion under the supervision of Junior Architect A. E. Alexander of the Branch of Plans and Design, National Park Service. Termite-infested wood was removed, a concrete floor was laid in the basement, exterior woodwork was repaired and painted, and the brick work was pointed. By 1942 the reconditioning of the mansion was 90 percent completed. A special use permit was prepared granting the Petersburg Chapter of the American Red Cross permission to use the building beginning on July 1, 1942, and until after the close of World War II, Centre Hill was occupied by the Red Cross.

When Centre Hill was first deeded to the National Park Service it was planned to use the building as a museum and administration building. The proposal of having this setup in the city with the park some distance away lost favor among officials, however, and the plan was abandoned. In 1949, the Petersburg Battlefield Museum Corporation was incorporated to take over Centre Hill and operate it as a museum. The City of Petersburg appropriated \$3,000 for this purpose, and on April 22, 1950, Centre Hill was formally opened to the public as a museum, under agreement with the National Park Service for the use of the building. Finally, the property was turned over to the corporation on October 24, 1952, with a brief ceremony, at which time Superintendent George F. Emery presented the deed to the property to Franklin W. Smith, president of the Petersburg Battlefield Museum Corporation.<sup>6</sup> With the deed was the stipulation that Centre Hill Mansion would always be maintained as a museum. If not observed, the mansion would revert to the Federal Government.

The nucleus of the museum was the A. P. Hill Camp, Confederate Veterans, collection, which was passed on to the Petersburg Chapter, United Daughters of the Confederacy. For a long time the collection was

kept at the Petersburg Public Library. Under the stewardship of Walter T. McCandlish, secretary of the Petersburg Battlefield Museum Corporation, the museum at Centre Hill was expanded with many generous donations and loans of articles relating to the war and to the story of Centre Hill Mansion.<sup>7</sup>

In October 1972, the Petersburg Battlefield Museum Corporation made over the property to the city of Petersburg, with the stipulation that if the mansion was not maintained as a museum, the property would revert to the Federal Government. The Civil War collection still belongs to the corporation, but most of it has been housed in the Siege Museum in the old Exchange Building on Bank Street. Centre Hill was closed in 1972 for extensive renovation and was reopened in 1978, in its new role, to portray an antebellum home. Already a major tourist attraction, the ultimate goal is to refurnish its many rooms, some of which now contain original Bolling furniture.<sup>8</sup>

## Chapter Fifteen

### Poplar Grove National Cemetery

Poplar Grove National Cemetery was established in July 1866 under the administrative control of the Office of the Quartermaster General, United States Army. Located on the Vaughan Road (State Route 675), the cemetery was laid out on the site of the 1865 encampment of the 50th New York Engineers. Their rustic log chapel, or church, stood until 1868, only a short distance north of the present flagpole.

Burial parties were sent out to collect the Union dead from the battlefields, and by 1867, there were 5,544 remains interred. The Rev. David Macrae, who toured the Petersburg battlefields in 1868, visited the cemetery with his companion, Major Giles B. Cooke, formerly of General Lee's staff:

We rode out to the Federal Soldiers' Cemetery at Poplar Grove, and tying our horses in the pine wood outside went in to wander for a while among the graves. The place is laid out in sections, each section with its melancholy forest of white head-boards on which are painted the names and regiments of the dead men below.... There were long rows of these "Unknown." Altogether 7500 dead men--soldiers of the Union--lay buried in this one cemetery. It was strange to walk through it with one [Cooke] before whom perhaps many of them had fallen.<sup>1</sup>

Macrae, however, was in error as to the number of graves. The burial corps continued its work for two more years and collected the remains of 634 soldiers before the disbandment of the corps on June 30, 1869. In the fall of 1868, efforts were made to decorate and landscape the grounds. Four 32-pounders were brought from Fort Monroe and placed upright on the outer edge of the drive circling the flagpole, graves were sodded, and some 1,200 trees were planted. A wooden flagpole was erected in 1866 by the burial corps, and in 1874 it was replaced by

another, which stood until 1913 when the present iron flagpole was put up.

Work on the superintendent's lodge, on the right of the cemetery gate, began on October 24, 1871, and was completed on March 30, 1872. The one and one-half story structure is the standard type of lodge erected in most national cemeteries. A combination toolshed and stable was erected in 1873, across from the lodge. It stood until 1929, when it was replaced by the present building.

A wooden fence surrounded the cemetery at first, and when it deteriorated, 4,000 osage orange trees were planted in its place. A brick wall around the cemetery was begun in 1873, but because of many setbacks, it was not finished until the fall of 1876.

May 30, 1871, was the first time graves at Poplar Grove National Cemetery were, according to the cemetery superintendent's report, "generally decorated by the people of Petersburg." Superintendent E. L. Grant made an effort in 1891 to have a rostrum erected for use on Memorial Day and other commemorative occasions, but it was not until 1896 that it was approved by the Quartermaster Department. Work was begun that year, and on January 2, 1897, the rostrum was completed.

Sixty-seven years after its establishment, Poplar Grove National Cemetery in August 1933 was transferred from the Office of the Quartermaster General, U. S. Army, to the National Park Service. Supervisory control of the cemetery at this time was made a responsibility of the superintendent of Colonial National Historical Park.

In 1934 the appearance of the cemetery underwent a drastic change. To facilitate the use of a power mower, and to save cutting the grass around the headstones by hand, the upright marble headstones erected in

1877 to replace the wooden markers were laid out flat on the graves. In the procedure, the blank parts of the headstones below the soldiers' names were cut off and sold to a Dinwiddie County mail carrier, who used them in the building of his residence, which today is sometimes called the "Tombstone House."<sup>2</sup> In time, the change came to be regretted. Many of the headstones sank far below the ground surface, and the grass which overgrows them could not be removed except by hand. In fiscal year 1978-1981 funds were allocated for raising the stones and repairing the wall at Poplar Grove.

On December 16, 1935, the cemetery was made the responsibility of the superintendent of the Petersburg National Military Park. The position of cemetery superintendent was abolished in 1949, the last superintendent being Benjamin F. Moore.

Poplar Grove National Cemetery, with an acreage of 8.72, contains the remains of 6,142 Union and 36 Confederate soldiers. Of the Civil War dead, only 2,126 Union and 13 Confederate soldiers have been identified. Veterans of other wars have since been buried in the cemetery, so that by April 1956 there was a total of 6,310 interments. In 1957, a World War I veteran was interred in the last available plot not reserved.<sup>3</sup>

## Epilogue

30th Anniversary - 1956

Petersburg National Military Park celebrated its 30th anniversary with an "Establishment Day" program held at the visitor center on July 3, 1956. In conjunction with the Establishment Day program, the visitor center building was formally dedicated. Just four days earlier members of the Museum Branch Staff had arrived from Washington to install the remaining exhibits, thus completing the museum's exhibit plan which had been initiated when plans for converting the superintendent's residence into a museum and administration building were formulated in 1954.<sup>1</sup>

Franklin W. Smith, president of the Petersburg Battlefield Park Association since 1926, the principal speaker, was introduced by Walter T. McCandlish, secretary of the Petersburg Battlefield Museum Corporation. Mr. Smith reviewed in light of his own experiences the progress that was made in obtaining land necessary for the park. Donors of land to the park and problems in raising funds for the purchase of land were cited, as well as anecdotes of his long years of association with the Petersburg battlefields.

Following Mr. Smith's address, Superintendent Floyd B. Taylor introduced two former superintendents of Petersburg National Military Park, Oscar F. Northington, Jr., and Dr. J. Walter Coleman, and members of the audience who had played a part in the development of the park, including officials in the Region One and Washington offices. Among the guests recognized were Miss Anne V. Mann and Major Joseph Mills Hanson, two who were instrumental in the early development of the park.

The program concluded with the dedication of the visitor center by Director Conrad L. Wirth, who was introduced by Regional Director Elbert Cox. Mr. Wirth discarded his prepared address and spoke generally of the aims of the National Park Service and of MISSION 66. The exercises concluded with the cutting of the ribbon by the superintendent and the park staff, which officially opened the new museum.<sup>2</sup>

The ceremonies conducted at the visitor center July 3, 1956, appropriately marked the end of 30 years of Petersburg National Military Park history and the fruition of a project envisioned almost 60 years earlier by the Petersburg National Battlefield Park Association.

## Notes

### Chapter One: Historical Sketch of Petersburg Before 1861

1. James G. Scott and Edward A. Wyatt, IV, Petersburg's Story: A History (Petersburg: Titmus Optical Co., 1960), pp. 3-11.
2. John Bannister to Theodorick Bland, April 24, 1781, Charles Campbell, ed., The Bland Papers: Being A Selection From the Manuscripts of Colonel Theodorick Bland, Jr., 2 vols. (Petersburg: Edmund & Julian C. Ruffin, 1840-1843), II, 68. That Bannister's letter was misdated is evidenced by its contents.
3. The site near Blandford Church, at the junction of Rochell Lane and Crater Road (U.S. Route 301), was marked in 1927 by a monument erected by the Frances Bland Randolph Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution. Exercises commemorating the bicentennial anniversary of the battle on April 25, 1981, concluded with the placing of a wreath on the monument by the Frances Bland Randolph and the Colonel John Bannister chapters, Daughters of the American Revolution, Petersburg, Va.
4. Scott and Wyatt, Petersburg's Story, pp. 28-29; see also James H. Bailey, Petersburg in the Revolution (Petersburg: Bicentennial Commission, 1981).
5. Scott and Wyatt, Petersburg's Story, p. 30.
6. Ibid., pp. 43, 44.
7. Lee A. Wallace, Jr., "The Petersburg Volunteers, 1812-1813," The Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, 82, No. 4 (October 1974), pp. 458-85.
8. Scott and Wyatt, Petersburg's Story, pp. 94-97.
9. Ibid., pp. 92-93.
10. Ibid., pp. 85-86.
11. U. S. Census, Statistical View of the United States ... Being a Compendium of the Seventh Census, by J. D. B. DeBow (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1854), p. 192.
12. Lee A. Wallace, Jr., "The First Regiment of Virginia Volunteers, 1846-1848," The Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, 74, No. 1 (January 1969), pp. 50, 56-57, 65, 75.
13. Lee A. Wallace, Jr., "Musters at Poplar Lawn," Virginia Cavalcade, No. 3 (Winter 1968), pp. 4-10.
14. Edward Pollock, Historical and Industrial Guide to Petersburg, Virginia (Petersburg: Index-Appeal Print., 1884), p. 46.

## Chapter Two: Military Operations at Petersburg, 1862-1865

1. Petersburg Daily Express, quoted in the Richmond Daily Dispatch, May 11, 1861; Lee A. Wallace, Jr., "Revolving Cannon By Messrs. Tappay & Lumsden of Petersburg, Virginia, 1861," The American Arms Collector, II, No. 1 (January 1958), pp. 28-30. For a biographical sketch of Henry Clay Pate (1832-1864), see John Lipscombe Johnson, The University Memorial Biographical Sketches of Alumni of the University of Virginia Who Fell in the Confederate War (Baltimore: Turnbull Brothers, 1871), pp. 578-90. Tradition has it that two of these revolving cannon were made, and that one blew up during tests across the river from Petersburg. The surviving cannon, acquired after the war by Stith Bolling of Petersburg, is now on display at the Siege Museum in Petersburg.
2. Petersburg Daily Express, July 23, 1861.
3. Susan P. Lee, Memorial of William Nelson Pendleton, D. D. (Philadelphia: J. P. Lippincott Co., 1893), pp. 168-69.
4. John W. Mallet, "Work of the Ordnance Bureau of the War Department of the Confederate States, 1861-5," Southern Historical Society Papers, XXXVII (January-December 1909), 10; Scott and Wyatt, Petersburg's Story, pp. 224-25.
5. Official Records of the Union and Confederate Navies in the War of the Rebellion, 30 vols. (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1894-1922), Ser. II, Vol. 2, pp. 157, 250.
6. Ibid., pp. 544-45; Joseph T. Durkin, S. J., Stephen R. Mallory: Confederate Navy Chief (Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 1954), p. 305.
7. James H. Brewer, The Confederate Negro: Virginia's Craftsmen and Military Laborers, 1861-1865 (Durham: Duke University Press, 1969), p. 156. For a map of the Dimmock Line, see Atlas to Accompany the Official Records of the Union and Confederate Armies (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1895), Plate XL, No. I.
8. George S. Bernard, comp. and ed., War Talks of Confederate Veterans (Petersburg: Fenn & Owen, Publishers, 1892), pp. 112-19.
9. Fletcher H. Archer, "The Defense of Petersburg on the 9th of June, 1864," in Bernard, ed., War Talks of Confederate Veterans, pp. 107-48.
10. The War of the Rebellion: A Compilation of the Official Records of the Union and Confederate Armies, 128 vols. (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1880-1901), Ser. I, XIII, Part 2, pp. 150-260; cited hereafter as O. R. A.

11. O. R. A., Ser. I, XL, Part 1, pp. 556-63; George S. Bernard, "The Battle of the Crater," in Bernard, ed., War Talks of Confederate Veterans, pp. 149-230.

12. O. R. A., Ser. III, V, pp. 69-73.

13. Much has been written about the cattle raid, including a book by Edward Boykin, Beefsteak Raid (New York: Funk & Wagnalls Co., 1960). Another recommended account of the raid is Major Joseph Mills Hanson, "Rustling Yankee Beefsteaks," Richmond Times-Dispatch, August 1 and August 8, 1943; reprinted in the Petersburg Progress-Index, September 2 and September 9, 1956. Still another is Richard Lykes, "Hampton's Cattle Raid September 14-17, 1984," Military Affairs, XXI, No. 1 (Spring 1957), pp. 1-20.

14. For a detailed study of this operation, or the "Fifth Offensive," see Richard J. Sommers, Richmond Redeemed: The Siege of Petersburg (New York: Doubleday & Company, Inc., 1981).

15. Andrew A. Humphreys, The Virginia Campaign of '64 and '65, which was first published in 1883, remains a standard reference for the operations against Richmond and Petersburg. The same holds true for the pertinent articles in Robert C. Johnson and Clarence C. Buel, eds., Battles and Leaders of the Civil War (New York: Century Co., 1888), IV, 533-94, 708-24.

### Chapter Three: Petersburg Battlefields, 1865-1936

1. David Macrae, The Americans At Home (New York: E. P. Dutton & Co., Inc., 1952), p. 135.

2. John T. Trowbridge, The Desolate South 1865-1866, ed. Gordon Carroll (New York: Duell, Sloan and Pearce, 1956), p. 115, an edited and condensed edition of A Picture of the Desolated States and the Work of Restoration (1868); letter by an unknown writer in 1867, in Petersburg Progress-Index, June 20, 1932; Russell H. Conwell, Magnolia Journey: A Union Veteran Revisits the Former Confederate States, ed. Joseph C. Carter, Southern Historical Publications No. 17 (University: University of Alabama Press, 1974), p. 20. Russell Herman Conwell (1843-1925) was a lieutenant colonel at the end of the war. He had a varied career as a lawyer, foreign correspondent, and clergyman, and was the author of several books. Who Was Who in America, s. v. "Conwell, Russell Herman."

3. James I. Robertson, Jr., ed., "English Views of the Civil War: Unique Excursion to Virginia, April 2-8, 1865," The Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, 77, no. 2 (April 1969), pp. 201-12.

4. Petersburg Daily Index, Oct. 23, 1965. The announcement in the Daily Index, July 4, 1865, described the "Retreat" as being located at Fort Stedman, and on the "grounds known as New Market, in the immediate vicinity of the late residence of O. P. Hare, Esq." Napoleon B. Hawes

was 26 years old and a merchant when he was mustered into service at Suffolk, Va., April 27, 1861, as a second lieutenant in the Marion Rangers, which become Co. D, 16th Regiment Virginia Volunteers. Wounded at Malvern Hill July 1, 1862, he was disqualified for field service and in 1863 was appointed Provost Marshal of Petersburg. He was paroled at Appomattox Court House and took the oath of amnesty on May 11, 1865. National Archives and Records Service, comp., Compiled Service Records of Confederate Soldiers Who Served in Organizations from the State of Virginia, Microcopy No. 324 (Washington: National Archives and Records Service, 1961), Roll 575.

5. Trowbridge, Desolate South, pp. 112-17. Major General John Gibbon, on whose staff Trowbridge's guide was serving, was in command of the District of Nottoway, with headquarters at Centre Hill, the Bolling residence in Petersburg.

6. James Henry Platt, Jr. (1836-1894) was born in Canada and studied at the University of Vermont. After settling in Petersburg, he helped to write the radical Underwood State Constitution, required by the First Reconstruction Act in 1867. He served on the Petersburg City Council and was a radical Republican in the U.S. House of Representatives, 1870-1875. He was living in New York in 1875 and in 1887 settled in Denver, Colorado, where he was engaged in selling insurance, manufacturing paper, and mining. Platt was drowned in Green Lake near Georgetown, Colorado, and was buried in Fairmont Cemetery in Denver. William D. Henderson, The Unredeemed City: Reconstruction in Petersburg, Va.: 1870-1875 (Washington: University Press of America, 1977), pp. 106-07; Biographical Directory of the American Congress 1774-1971, s. v. "Platt, James Henry."

7. Jarratt's Hotel, A Guide to the Fortifications and Battlefields Around Petersburg (Petersburg: Daily Index Job Print, 1866), pp. 21-26. Orange Judd (1822-1892) was editor, owner, and publisher of the American Agriculturist. He served with the U. S. Sanitary Commission at Petersburg during the siege. Jarratt's Hotel guide book was copyrighted on June 9, 1866, by Platt, and Simmons who has not been identified. There was another issue in 1866, which was identical, but lacked the copyright imprint on the front cover. Still another issue appeared in 1867.

8. Jarratt's Hotel, A Guide to the Fortifications and Battlefields Around Petersburg (Petersburg: J. B. Ege's Printing House, 1869). The copy described is in the library of the Petersburg National Battlefield. The entry for this edition in the National Union Catalog Pre-1956 Imprints states there are 26 pages and makes no mention of the additional material included in the edition at Petersburg National Battlefield. Phillip Francis Brown (1842-1921) enlisted in April 1861 in the Petersburg Greys, Co. B, which became Co. C, 12th Regiment Virginia Volunteers, and a part of Mahone's brigade. He was wounded at Sharpsburg in September 1862 and captured. After his exchange he was declared unfit for service and discharged. He spent the remainder of the war as a clerk in the American Hotel, Richmond, Va., which was burned in the evacuation fire. In addition to managing hotels in Petersburg, Norfolk, and Blue Ridge Springs, Botetourt County, after the war, he was a member of the Virginia House of

Delegates, 1891-1892, and a member of the Board of Visitors, Virginia Military Institute, 1900-1906. He was a member of the A. P. Hill Camp, Confederate Veterans, in Petersburg in 1894. Phillip F. Brown, Reminiscences of the War of 1861-1865 (Roanoke: Union Printing Co., c. 1912), pp. 3-53 passim.

9. The Index, Petersburg, Va., Oct. 10, 1867; quoted in the Petersburg Progress-Index, May 4, 1941.

10. Petersburg Progress-Index, June 20, 1932.

11. Presumably, this 1867 article appeared in The Index; quoted in the Petersburg Progress-Index, May 1941.

12. Jarratt's Hotel, Guide to the Fortifications and Battlefields Around Petersburg (1866), p. 22.

13. Petersburg Daily Express, Sept. 15, 1865.

14. Army & Navy Journal, June 30, 1866, p. 713.

15. Cornelius H. Benson, "Yank" and "Reb," A History of a Fraternal Visit by Lincoln Post, No. 11, G. A. R. of Newark N. J. to Robert E. Lee Camp, No. 1, Confederate Veterans and Phil. Kearney [sic] Post, No. 10 G.A.R., of Richmond, Va., October 15th to October 18th, inclusive (Newark: M. H. Newhut, printer, 1884), pp. 110-11; Milton A. Embick, ed., Military History of the Third Division, Ninth Corps, Army of the Potomac ([Harrisburg]: C. E. Aughinbaugh, Printer to the State, 1913), pp. 64-68; John D. Billings, The History of the Tenth Massachusetts Battery of Light Artillery in the War of the Rebellion, 1862-1865 (Boston: Arakelyan Press, 1909), pp. 468-69.

16. Benson, "Yank" and "Reb", p. 111.

17. Robertson, ed., "English Views of the Civil War," pp. 207-08; O. R. A., Ser. 111, V, pp. 73, 74; Joseph Mills Hanson to Verne E. Chatelain, November 1934, Historian's files, Petersburg National Battlefield.

18. William P. Hopkins, The Seventh Regiment Rhode Island Volunteers in the Civil War 1862-1865 (Providence: Providence Press, 1903), pp. 247, 252.

19. Edward A. Wyatt, IV, "George Keith Taylor, 1769-1815, Virginia Federalist and Humanitarian," William and Mary College Quarterly Magazine, 2nd Ser., Vol. 16, No. 1 (January 1936), pp. 2-3, 15; Herbert Olsen and Lee A. Wallace, Jr., Study of the Taylor House Remains, February 17, 1954, Historian's files, Petersburg National Battlefield; Billings, History of the Tenth Massachusetts Battery, pp. 468-69; Petersburg Index-Appeal, Dec. 10, 1921.

20. Petersburg Progress-Index, undated clipping of April 1956.

21. Scott and Wyatt, Petersburg's Story, pp. 145-46; Brooke S. Blades and John L. Cotter, Archaeological Excavations at the Hare House Site, Petersburg National Battlefield, January 1978, Office of Planning and Research Preservation, Mid-Atlantic Region, National Park Service. Otway P. Hare died in Petersburg on Nov. 20, 1891, at the of 88, and was buried in Blandford Cemetery.

22. Charles Friend was in Capt. Edmund Ruffin, Jr.'s company, known as the Prince George Light Dragoons, which became Co. F, 5th Regiment Virginia Cavalry (1861-1862), and later Co. F, 13th Regiment Virginia Cavalry. In June 1862, he was serving as an orderly for Col. John Thompson Brown, 1st Regiment Virginia Artillery. An 1862 pay voucher describes Charles Friend as being 44 years old, 5 feet 10 inches in height, with a florid complexion and sandy hair, and a farmer by occupation. National Archives and Records Service, comp., Compiled Service Records of Confederate Soldiers Who Served in Organizations from the State of Virginia, Roll 59.

23. Friend House (Whitehill) Notes, No. 25, Historian's files Petersburg National Battlefield; Jennie Friend Stephenson, White Hill [sic] Veteran of the Wars 1781 - 1864-1865 - 1917-1918. My Father And His Household Before, During and After the War, April 22, 1897, privately published c. 1967; Petersburg Progress-Index, July 28, 1935.

24. P. A. Jordan to Edward A. Wyatt, IV, July 12, 1934; Mrs. John V. Pinner to Edward A. Wyatt, IV, Oct. 29, 1934, in No. 31, Jordan House - Clermont, Historian's files, Petersburg National Battlefield.

25. Jarratt's Hotel, Guide to the Fortifications and Battlefields Around Petersburg (1866), p. 16; Scott and Wyatt, Petersburg's Story, pp. 203-04. D. R. Lauter, a Richard Bland College student, made private archeological excavations on the Globe Tavern site, uncovering the foundations and recovering a variety of artifacts; see Petersburg Progress-Index, Sept. 11, 1972.

26. Robertson, ed., "English Views of the Civil War," p. 208.

27. Jarratt's Hotel, Guide to the Fortifications and Battlefields Around Petersburg (1866), p. 16. A description of the church, which was used as a theater during the week, and its interior is in George R. Agassiz, ed., Meade's Headquarters 1863-1865: Letters of Colonel Therodore Lyman From the Wilderness to Appomattox (Boston: Atlantic Monthly Press, 1922), pp. 311-12.

28. Trowbridge, Desolate South, p. 117. A tablet above the main entrance stated the church had been presented to the trustees of Poplar Spring Church. Jarratt's Hotel, Guide to the Fortifications and Battlefields Around Petersburg (1866), p. 18.

29. Macrae, Americans At Home, p. 173.

30. Conwell, Magnolia Journey, p. 20.

31. Jarratt's Hotel, Guide to the Fortifications and Battlefields Around Petersburg (1866), p. 19. A report on the burning of William L. Peebles' home in 1885 in the Petersburg Daily Index-Appeal, March 3, 1885, gives the impression that the signal tower was then standing, but it had been dismantled shortly after the war by the father of Walworth Peebles, who was living in Petersburg in 1954. The dwelling built on the site of the 1885 fire was burned about 1950. Interview, Walter T. McCandlish, March 1954.
32. Map of the Battlefield of the Crater, Sept. 3, 1892, by Timothy F. Rives, County Surveyor, Dinwiddie County, Va., in Bernard, ed., War Talks of Confederate Veterans, between pp. 316-17.
33. Trowbridge, Desolate South, p. 115.
34. Petersburg Progress-Index, July 28, 1935.
35. Macrae, Americans At Home, p. 176. Macrae's companion was Major Giles Buckner Cooke (1838-1937), who was appointed to Lee's staff in November 1864, and died as its last survivor.
36. Johnson and Buel, eds., Battles and Leaders of the Civil War, IV, 559-560. For an anecdote on the lifting of a prized canteen from the Griffith collection by a New Jersey veteran in 1883, see Benson, "Yank" and "Reb", pp. 109-10.
37. U. R. Brooks, ed., Stories of the Confederacy (Columbia: State Co., 1912), p. 53. One visitor in 1878 was agitated by the wheat field, peach trees, and chicken coops he found near the hallowed site. William D. Henderson, Gilded Age City: Politics, Life and Labor in Petersburg, Virginia, 1874-1889 (Washington: University Press of America, 1980), p. 301.
38. In April 1875, the veterans of Mahone's brigade, which on July 30, 1864, was under Col. David A. Weisiger's command, organized a brigade association, The Crater Legion. Petersburg Index-Appeal, April 9, 1875, May 11, 1875, October 2, 1875.
39. Bernard, ed., War Talks of Confederate Veterans, op. p. 148.
40. Confederate Veteran, XI, No. 12 (December 1903), pp. 557-58; Petersburg Progress-Index, 1937 Crater reenactment edition, April 30, 1937; Pocahontas W. Edmunds, Virginians Out Front (Richmond: Whittet & Shepperson, 1972), p. 383.
41. The "Crater" Battlefield & Museum, Crater Battlefield Association, Inc., brochure, Historian's files, Petersburg National Battlefield.
42. Petersburg Progress-Index, clipping c. 1956, which is an account with a sketch of the 1926 tunnel reexcavations written for the Petersburg Chapter, United Daughters of the Confederacy, by Dr. C. Wesley Hale, Wales, Mass. Dr. Hale and Massachusetts veteran James Anderson were

familiar figures in Petersburg, and both were made honorary members of the A. P. Hill Camp, Confederate Veterans.

43. Petersburg Progress-Index, April 30, 1937; Francis R. Toms, "The Petersburg National Battlefield Park," paper, Department of English, University of North Carolina, 1929, pp. 47, 48; interesting period photographs and postcard views of the Crater, tunnel, and "relic house" are appended to this. An early photograph which shows the Crater area without the "relic house" is in the Richmond Magazine (42nd Annual Confederate Reunion Program number), Vol. 18, No. 12 (June 1932), p. 29.

44. Richmond Times-Dispatch, Feb. 4, 1932; Petersburg Progress-Index, April 30, 1937; Richmond Times-Dispatch, Nov. 29, 1935.

45. Confederate Southern Memorial Association, History of the Confederated Memorial Associations of the South (New Orleans: Confederate Southern Memorial Association, 1904), pp. 228-92.

46. Petersburg Progress-Index, June 20, 1932.

47. Horace H. Shaw, The First Maine Heavy Artillery 1862-1865 (Portland, 1903), p. 126, illustration following p. 513.

48. Joseph Gould, The Story of the Forty-Eighth (Philadelphia: Arranged by F. H. Taylor; printed by Alfred M. Slocum Co., 1908), pp. 368-90.

49. Johnson Hagood, Memoirs of the War of Secession (Columbia: State Co., 1910), p. 477; Confederate Veteran, XXI, No. 8 (August 1913), p. 104.

50. Embick, ed., Military History of the Third Division, Ninth Corps, pp. 61-68, 70-100.

51. Ibid., pp. 68-69.

52. Ella Donnan Mann, Four Years in the Governor's Mansion of Virginia (Richmond: Dietz Press, 1937), p. 83. The site for the monument was donated by Mrs. Griffith, who owned the Crater farm at the time. Confederate Veteran, XVIII, no. 11 (November 1919), p. 527. In June 1939, the monument was moved few yards from its original site to a grass plot, dividing the exit and entrance to the road leading to the Crater. In April 1962, the monument was moved to its present location.

53. The Louisiana Tiffany window, unveiled on June 9, 1904, in Blandford Church, was dedicated to the men of the battalion who gave their lives in the defense of Petersburg. The cost of the window, \$400, was raised in one day by Mrs. W. J. Behan, Mrs. John B. Richardson, and a member of the Washington Artillery Camp No. 15, United Confederate Veterans, New Orleans, La. Minute Book of the Ladies Memorial Association of Petersburg, 1866-1912, pp. 114, 147, 148.

54. Confederate Veteran, XXXII, No. 12 (December 1923), p. 472; ibid., XXXIII, No. 6 (June 1924), p. 220.

55. Resentment in Petersburg over Mahone's post-war politics was strong enough in 1927 to cause his monument to be erected at the Crater battlefield rather than nearer the city as originally planned. This sentiment also thwarted a move to name the present Crater Road (U. S. Route 301) in his honor. Interview, Miss Anne V. Mann, January 1956.

56. Gould, Story of the Forty-Eighth, pp. 391-98; Confederate Veteran, XIX, No. 8 (August 1911), p. 387.

57. Petersburg Progress-Index, June 20, 1932, undated clipping of April 1956.

58. Benjamin J. Hillman, Monuments to Memories (Richmond: Virginia Civil War Commission, 196?), pp. 41-42; Petersburg Progress-Index, Nov. 8, 1959, Nov. 8, 1972.

59. Lee Traveler, Fort Lee, Va., Feb. 29, 1952; Petersburg Progress-Index, Feb. 9, 1943. For an article on the railroad and its route through the area now covered by Fort Lee, see Lee Traveler, June 5, 1953.

60. United Daughters of the Confederacy Magazine, VIII, No. 7 (July 1945), cover, pp. 14-15.

61. Petersburg Progress-Index, June 20, 1932; Richmond Times-Dispatch, Oct. 11, 1959. For an account of the tunnels and excavations made at Fort Sedgwick, see the Confederate Veteran, XXXVIII, No. 10 (October 1925), pp. 418-20. The tunnels are also described and pictured in the Petersburg Progress-Index, April 30, 1937.

62. Richmond Times-Dispatch, June 5, 1966; Petersburg Progress-Index, June 12, 1966; Interview, David A. Lyon III, March 1, 1982.

63. Scott and Wyatt, Petersburg's Story, pp. 333-34; Petersburg Progress-Index, June 20, 1932, May 4, 1941.

64. Crater register book, 1867-1901; Mary Logan, Reminiscences of the Civil War and the Reconstruction, ed. George W. Adams (Carbondale, Ill.: Southern Illinois University Press, 1970), pp. 170-74; Nora F. M. Davidson, Cullings From the Confederacy 1862-1866 (Washington: Rufus H. Darby Printing Co., 1903), pp. 156-60.

65. Petersburg Progress-Index, June 20, 1932.

#### Chapter Four: Efforts to Establish a Park at Petersburg, 1898-1925

1. Petersburg Progress-Index, June 20, 1932; Ronald F. Lee, The Origin and Evolution of the National Military Park Idea, United States Department of the Interior, National Park Service, Office of Park Historic Preservation (Washington, 1973), pp. 7-12.

2. Stith Bolling (1835-1916), a native of Lunenburg County, Va., enlisted as a private and rose to be captain of Co. G, 9th Regiment Virginia Cavalry. He was wounded six times, and at Morton's Ford he was left for dead on the field, but was able to return for duty three months later. Rather than surrender, he attempted, but without success, to escape south to join Johnston's army. After the war he was at various times president of the Petersburg Tobacco Association, vice president of the Petersburg Chamber of Commerce, and commander of the Confederate Veteran Association of Virginia; and he filled high offices in the A. P. Hill Camp, Confederate Veterans, and the United Confederate Veterans. Clement A. Evans, ed., Confederate Military History (Atlanta: Confederate Publishing Co., 1899, III (expanded Virginia volume), 739; Confederate Veteran, XXVI, No. 1 (January 1918), p. 32.

3. Sidney Parham Epes (1865-1900); a native of Nottoway County, Virginia, was raised and educated in Kentucky and in 1884 returned to Virginia, where he edited a Democratic newspaper in Blackstone. He was a member of the Virginia House of Delegates in 1891 and 1892, and was register of the Virginia land office, 1895-1897. Epes served in the Fifty-fifth Congress, 1897-1898, and in 1899 he was elected to the Fifty-sixth Congress, where he served until his death on March 3, 1900. Biographical Directory of the American Congress, 1774-1971, s. v. "Epes, Sidney Parham."

4. U. S. Congress, House, "A Bill To establish a national military park at Petersburg, Virginia," H.R. 5875, Congressional Record, 55th Cong., 2nd Sess., 1898, p. 414.

5. Petersburg Daily Index-Appeal, March 5, 1898. George Smith Bernard (1837-1912), born in Culpeper County, Va., and educated at the University of Virginia, served in the 12th Regiment Virginia Volunteers and was twice wounded. After the war he was editor of the Petersburg Express, practiced law, and served in the Virginia legislature. He was the compiler and editor of War Talks of Confederate Veterans, published in 1892, and was the author of several articles which appeared in the Southern Historical Society Papers. Confederate Veteran, XX, No. 8 (August 1912), p. 382.

6. Petersburg Daily Index-Appeal, March 26, 1898.

7. Petersburg Daily Index-Appeal, April 5, 1898.

8. U. S. Congress, House, "A Bill To establish a national military park at the battlefields around Petersburg, Virginia," H.R. 7345, Congressional Record, 65th Cong., 1st Sess., 1900, p. 1218.

9. U. S. Congress, House, "A Bill To establish a national military park at the battlefields around Petersburg, Virginia," H.R. 83, Congressional Record, 57th Cong., 1st Sess., 1901, p. 52. Francis Rives Lassiter (1856-1909) of Petersburg was city attorney, 1888-1893, and captain of Co. G (Petersburg Grays), 4th Regiment of Infantry, State Militia, 1889-1893. A Democrat, he was elected to the Fifty-sixth Congress, 1900-1903, and to the Sixtieth and Sixty-first Congresses, and served from 1907 until his death on Oct. 31, 1909. Biographical Directory of the American Congress, 1774-1971, s. v. "Lassiter, Francis Rives."

10. Petersburg Index-Appeal, undated clipping, July 1917; James T. Rahily to Stith Bolling, Sept. 9, 1899, Franklin W. Smith Collection, Petersburg National Battlefield.

11. U. S. Congress, House, "Joint Resolution Authorizing a commission to examine the battlefields around Petersburg, Virginia, and report whether it is advisable to establish a battlefield park," H. J. Res. 103, Congressional Record, 59th Cong., 1st Sess., 1906, pp. 2817, 4088.

12. U. S. Congress, House, Committee on Military Affairs, Battlefields Around Petersburg, Va., Report to Accompany H. J. Res. 103, H. Rept. 2469, Congressional Record, 59th Cong., 1st Sess., 1906, p. 4088.

13. U. S. Congress, Senate, "Joint Resolution Authorizing a commission to examine the battlefields around Petersburg, Virginia, and report whether it is advisable to establish a battlefield park," S. J. Res. 45 (Calendar No. 38481), Congressional Record, 59th Cong., 1st Sess., 1906, p. 9639.

14. Petersburg Daily Index-Appeal, June 20, 1907.

15. Petersburg Daily Index-Appeal, April 28, 1907. Charles Hall Davis (1872-1954) was a well-known Petersburg lawyer, banker, and owner of Centre Hill Mansion. He was educated at Southern College, Petersburg, of which his father was president, and Randolph-Macon College, where he received his A. B. and A. M. degrees. He received his legal training at the University of Virginia and was admitted to the Virginia bar in 1893. During 1909-1910, he was chairman of the executive committee of the Southern Commercial Conference, and in 1913 he was a counsel to the United States Commission on Agricultural Credits. He was also known as a writer on constitutional subjects. Petersburg Progress-Index, June 26, 1954.

16. Petersburg Daily Index-Appeal, May 3, 1907.

17. Petersburg Daily Index-Appeal, May 7, 1907.

18. Petersburg Daily Index-Appeal, May 19, 1907.

19. U. S. Congress, Congressional Record, 69th Cong., 1st Sess., 1926, pp. 3468-69; M. Clifford Harrison, Home to the Cockade City (Richmond: House of Dietz, 1942), p. 102.

20. Petersburg Daily Index-Appeal, May 22, 1907.

21. U. S. Congress, Senate, "Joint Resolution Authorizing a commission to examine the battlefields around Petersburg, Virginia, and report whether it is advisable to establish a battlefield park," S. J. Res. 36, Congressional Record, 60th Cong., 1st Sess., 1908, p. 771.

22. U. S. Congress, House, Committee on Military Affairs, Lines of Investment and Defense Around Petersburg, Va., Report to Accompany H. Con. Res. No. 10, H. Rept. 1511, Congressional Record, 60th Cong., 1st Sess., 1908, pp. 310, 5207.

23. U. S. Congress, House, "Concurrent Resolution Directing the Secretary of War to cause to be made an investigation of the lines of investment and defenses around Petersburg, Virginia," H. Con. Res. 7, Congressional Record, 61st Cong., 1st Sess., 1909, p. 164.

24. Correspondence relating to the Memorial Road Plan, and the establishment of a park at Petersburg, May-June 1909, Francis R. Lassiter Papers, Library, Petersburg National Battlefield.

25. Correspondence relating to the Memorial Road Plan, and the establishment of a park at Petersburg, May-June 1909.

26. Confederate Veteran, XIV, No. 4 (April 1906), p. 165.

27. The great-grandfather of Archibald Gracie (1858-1921) was Archibald Gracie (d. 1829), a Scottish merchant in Petersburg before he moved to New York City in the 1790s. There he became prominent as a merchant, banker, and builder of the Gracie Mansion. Colonel Gracie was educated at St. Paul's School, Concord, N. H., and in 1877, entered the United States Military Academy, but was there for only a year. His title "Colonel" was honorary as his only military experience was the year at West Point and a period of service as a private in the New York 7th Regiment. Before his death which resulted from his experiences on the Titanic, he prepared The Truth About the Titanic, published in 1913. National Cyclopedia of American Biography, s. v. "Gracie, Archibald."

28. Patrick Henry Drewry (1875-1947), a Petersburg lawyer, was a delegate to national and state Democratic conventions and a member of the Virginia Senate (1912-1920) before his election to Congress, where he served from 1920 until his death. Deeply interested in history, he was a member of the American Historical Association and the Virginia Historical Society, and was the author of a history of the Washington Street Methodist Church in Petersburg, monographs, and articles. He was also a member of the A. P. Hill Camp, Sons of Confederate Veterans. Biographical Directory of the American Congress, 1774-1971, s. v. "Drewry, Patrick Henry"; Who Was Who in American Congress, 1774-1971, s.v. "Drewry Patrick Henry"; Scott and Wyatt, Petersburg's Story, p. 337.

29. U. S. Congress, Senate, "A Bill Authorizing and directing the Secretary of War to appoint a commission to designate, define, and survey the battlefield of the Crater at Petersburg, Virginia, and to collect certain data concerning the same and make report thereupon," S. 4635, Congressional Record, 63rd Cong., 2nd Sess., 1914, p. 3935.

30. U. S. Congress, House, Committee on Military Affairs, Commission to Survey Crater Battlefield, Report to Accompany H. R. 13923, H. Rept. 744, Congressional Record, 63rd Cong., 2nd Sess., 1914, pp. 3999, 9708, 14564; ibid., 63rd Cong., 3rd Sess., 1915, p. 942.

31. Carter Richard Bishop (1849-1941), a native of Prince George County, Va., was admitted to the Virginia Military Institute in 1864, when the corps was housed in the Almshouse in Richmond. Shortly before the evacuation of the city, the cadets were called into the defenses, and on

April 3, 1865, he was captured. In 1870, he graduated from Hampden-Sidney College. After teaching school in Kentucky for five years he returned to Petersburg, where he spent the remainder of his life as a bank cashier and civil engineer. Captain Bishop was devoted to history and enjoyed conducting visitors over the battlefields, cutting a colorful figure in the semimilitary attire he wore most of the time. Evans, ed., Confederate Military History, III (expanded Virginia volume), 729-30; Register of Former Cadets, Memorial Edition, Virginia Military Institute (Lexington, 1957), p. 64.

32. Patrick H. Drewry to Mrs. E. J. Nixon, Feb. 28, 1924, typed copy in Historian's files, Petersburg National Battlefield.

33. Interviews, Walter T. McCandlish, David Lyon, Jr., and Miss Anne V. Mann, Petersburg, Va., January 1956.

#### Chapter Five: Establishment of the Petersburg National Military Park

1. U. S. Congress, "An Act to provide for the inspection of the battlefields of the siege of Petersburg, Va.," Public 392 (H.R. 3669), Congressional Record, 68th Cong., 2d Sess., 1925, p. 3748.

2. Francis Armory Pope (1875-1953), born in Iowa, was appointed to the United States Military Academy from Kansas and graduated in 1900. After service in the infantry, he transferred to the engineers in January 1902. He served with the A. E. F. in World War I and retired as a colonel in 1934. West Point Alumni Foundation, Register of Graduates and Former Cadets, United States Military Academy, Civil War Centennial Edition-1 (West Point, 1961), p. 245.

3. James Anderson (1848-1926) was born in northern Ireland and as a child came with his parents to the United States, where they settled in Northampton, Mass. He enlisted under an alias, Lawrence James, and gave his age as 18, in Co. M, 31st Maine Infantry, Oct. 18, 1864. After the war Anderson moved to Springfield, Mass., where in 1882 he was appointed Western Massachusetts agent for the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals and made an enviable reputation in that work. He was active in the E. K. Wilcox Post, Grand Army of the Republic, was its commander in 1910, when 90 Confederate veterans from Petersburg visited Springfield, and participated in the Fourth of July celebration. Colonel Anderson was well known for his humorous speeches, wit, and specialty music numbers, and for 30 years took part in the annual Christmas entertainment provided for jail inmates in Springfield. Springfield, Mass. Daily Republican, April 20, 1926.

4. U. S. Congress, House, Committee on Military Affairs, National Military Park Near Petersburg, Va.: Hearings on H. R. 7817, 69th Cong., 1st Sess., Feb. 8, 1926 (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1926), pp. 3-6.

5. U. S. Congress, "An Act to establish a national military park at the battlefields of the siege of Petersburg, Virginia," Public 467 (H.R. 7817), Congressional Record, 69th Cong., 1st Sess., 1926, pp. 1179, 2208, 7552, 9536, 10836, 10887, 12632, 12886, 13035, 13040.
6. U. S. Congress, Congressional Record, 69th Cong., 1st Sess., 1926, pp. 3468-69.
7. Petersburg Progress-Index, Feb. 26, 1926.
8. Springfield, Mass., Daily Republican, April 20, 21, 1926.
9. Petersburg Progress-Index, Oct. 6, 9, 1926.
10. Franklin W. Smith (1881-1960), civil leader and churchman, was also, from 1949 until his death, president of the Petersburg Battlefield Museum Corp., which established and maintained the Centre Hill Mansion Museum, Petersburg, Va. He died at his home, Osage Farm, on the outskirts of Petersburg, Va. In tribute to him, the Progress-Index summarized a part of his life in saying: "Without the quiet and persistent efforts of Mr. Smith in the 20's and 30's, this great asset [Petersburg National Military Park] and attraction might never have come into being." Petersburg Progress-Index, Aug. 28, 29, 1960.
11. Homer T. Atkinson (1848-1945), a native of Petersburg, served in Col. Fletcher H. Archer's battalion of reserves in the Battle of June 9, 1864, and was its last survivor. He was taken prisoner but managed to escape, and in 1865 he was commissioned as second lieutenant, Co. B, 19th Regiment Mississippi Infantry. He was with the Mississippians and Louisiana artillerymen April 2, 1865, in the defense of Fort Gregg, where he was captured. He refused to take the oath of allegiance, remaining in prison until the mid-summer of 1865. Confederate Veteran, XL, No. 8 (August 1932), pp. 283, 318; Petersburg Progress-Index, April 1, 1945.
12. Petersburg Progress-Index, June 20, 1932; interview, Franklin W. Smith, January 1956. Anne V. Mann (1871-1959), affectionately known as "Miss Annie," for many years conducted the Progress-Index's "Lights and Shadows in Petersburg" column. She was widely known for her work in the Daughters of the American Revolution and the United Daughters of the Confederacy and held state and local offices in those organizations. Local history was her life, and she always had a profound interest in the work of the National Park Service at Petersburg.

#### Chapter Six: Petersburg National Military Park Under the War Department

1. Lee, Origin and Evolution of the National Military Park Idea, pp. 27, 31, 33; Petersburg Progress-Index, June 20, 1932.
2. U. S. Congress, "An Act to establish a national military park at the battlefields of the siege of Petersburg, Virginia," July, 3, 1926, Public 467 (H.R. 7817), Congressional Record, 69th Cong., 1st Sess., p. 13094.

3. West Point Alumni Foundation, Register of Graduates and Former Cadets, U. S. Military Academy, Civil War Centennial Edition - 1 (West Point, 1961), p. 246.
4. Massachusetts Adjutant General's Office, Massachusetts Soldiers, Sailors, and Marines in the Civil War (Norwood Press, 1931), I, 114.
5. Evans, ed., Confederate Military History, III (Virginia expanded volume), 729-30; Virginia Military Institute, Register of Former Cadets, p. 64.
6. Lee, Origin and Evolution of the National Military Park Idea, pp. 48, 50.
7. Petersburg Progress-Index, June 10, 1928.
8. Petersburg National Military Park Commission Annual Report for Fiscal Year 1930.
9. Quoted in Petersburg National Military Park Commission Annual Report for Fiscal Year 1930.
10. Petersburg National Military Park Commission Annual Report for Fiscal Year 1930.
11. Petersburg Progress-Index, Oct. 30, 1928.
12. Ibid.
13. Petersburg Progress-Index, Dec. 19, 1929.
14. Petersburg National Military Park Commission Annual Report for Fiscal Year 1930.
15. Petersburg Progress-Index, January 4, 1930.
16. Toms, Petersburg National Battlefield Park, p. 17.
17. Arthur Earl Wilbourn (1884-1965) was a native of Lexington, Va. After World War I he served in the cavalry and in 1944 retired with the rank of colonel to live in San Antonio, Texas. Joseph R. Anderson, Records of Service in the World War of V. M. I. Alumni and their Alma Mater (Lexington, 1920), pp. 145-46; West Point Alumni foundation, Register of Graduates and Former Cadets, United States Military Academy, p. 260.
18. Petersburg Progress-Index, Oct. 16, 1930.
19. Petersburg Progress-Index, April 9, 1932.
20. Seward William Jones (1857-1948), born in Ebensburg, Pa., was the son of Lieut. Hugh Jones, 209th Pennsylvania, who was killed at the Battle of Fort Stedman. Seward Jones attended public schools and the Soldiers' Orphans' School of Pennsylvania. He was very successful in the granite

business and at various times served as a trustee of the Danvers State Hospital, a member of the State Board of Health, and a member of the Governors' Council of Massachusetts. Who Was Who in America, s. v. "Jones, Seward William."

21. Washington Post, Jan. 6, 1929; Petersburg Progress-Index, Sept. 29, 1929.
22. Petersburg Progress-Index, Dec. 19, 1929.
23. Petersburg ProgressIndex, July 20, 1927. Lee Memorial Park, created by the city in 1926, contained 864 acres which included Willcox Lake, and about five miles of drives and three miles of trails.
24. Petersburg Progress-Index, Aug. 9, 1928.
25. Toms, Petersburg National Battlefield Park, p. 59.
26. Petersburg Progress-Index, Sept. 29, 1929.
27. Report of the Petersburg National Military Park Commission for the Fiscal Years 1930 and 1931; Richmond News Leader, Nov. 30, 1931.
28. Report of the Petersburg National Military Park Commission for the Fiscal Year 1931.
29. Report on the Development of the Petersburg Battlefield Park, Nov. 24, 1933.

#### Chapter Seven: Transfer of Park to the Department of the Interior and Administrative Changes

1. Executive Order 6166, Organization of Executive Agencies, Sec. 2, June 10, 1933.
2. Petersburg Progress-Index, Aug. 6, 1933.
3. Petersburg Progress-Index, Aug. 11, 1933.
4. Petersburg Progress-Index, Sept. 19, 1935. Dr. J. Walter Coleman (1906-1975), after leaving Petersburg in 1938, was successssively superintendent at Vicksburg and Gettysburg. He was a member of the National Civil War Centennial Commission and the Civil War Roundtables of Chicago, New York City, and Gettysburg. He wrote many articles and book reviews for the Catholic Historical Society Review and other publications.

5. Petersburg Progress-Index, Feb. 13, 1935, July 14, 1935, July 15, 1935. Dr. Freeman was appointed to fill the position formerly held on the commissary by an army officer.
6. Superintendent's Annual Report for the Fiscal Years 1936-1940.
7. Superintendent's Annual Report for the Fiscal Years 1939-1940.
8. Superintendent's Annual Report for the Fiscal Year 1947.

#### Chapter Eight: Land Acquisitions--Roads and Trails

1. Superintendent's Monthly Narrative Report, July 1936; Superintendent's Annual Report for the Fiscal Year 1936; Richmond Times-Dispatch, Nov. 29, 1935; Petersburg Progress-Index, Nov. 29, 1935, April 10, 1936, April 30, 1937.
2. Superintendent's Annual Report for the Fiscal Year 1939.
3. Superintendent's Annual Report for the Fiscal Year 1940.
4. U. S. Congress, "An Act to add certain surplus land to Petersburg National Military Park, Virginia, to define boundaries thereof, and for other purposes," Public 293, H.R. 4208, Congressional Record, 81st Cong., 1st Sess., 1949, p. 12767; National Archives, Federal Register, Vol. 17, No. 102 (May 23, 1942), pp. 4716-20.
5. Park History, 1932-1937, Library, Petersburg National Battlefield.
6. Petersburg Progress-Index, Sept. 18, 1935.
7. Petersburg Progress-Index, Dec. 13, 1955.
8. Superintendent's Monthly Report, 1938-1942.
9. Superintendent's Monthly Narrative Report, September 1949.
10. John A. Salmond, The Civilian Conservation Corps. 1933-1942: A New Deal Case Study (Durham: Duke University Press, 1967), pp. 84-85, 87.
11. Petersburg Progress-Index, July 13, 1933, July 4, 1937; Richmond News Leader, July 5, 1937.
12. Petersburg Progress-Index, March 30, 1941.
13. Superintendent's Annual Report for the Fiscal Year 1939.
14. Superintendent's Monthly Narrative Report, July 1942.
15. Superintendent's Monthly Narrative Report, October 1948.

## Chapter Nine: The Crater

1. Petersburg Progress-Index, April 23, 1936.
2. Superintendent's Monthly Narrative Report, July 1936.
3. Petersburg Progress-Index, April 19, 1936; Richmond News Leader, July 5, 1937; Superintendent's Annual Report for the Fiscal Year 1938.
4. Superintendent's Annual Report for the Fiscal Year 1939; Superintendent's Monthly Narrative Report, April-May 1937.
5. Raleigh C. Taylor (1909-1959), a native of Charlottesville, Va., and a graduate of the University of Virginia, came to Petersburg in 1933 as a historical assistant. He was later at Richmond and Fredericksburg and in 1937 returned to Petersburg as junior historical technician. In 1940 he was appointed custodian of Manassas National Battlefield Park, and later he was custodian of Guilford Courthouse National Military Park.
6. Petersburg Progress-Index, July 19, 1937.
7. Superintendent's Monthly Narrative Report, June 1937, November 1937, June 1938.
8. Superintendent's Annual Report for the Fiscal Year 1939.
9. Superintendent's Monthly Narrative Report, April 1937, May 1937.
10. Petersburg Progress-Index, April 30, 1937.
11. Petersburg Progress-Index, May 2, 1937.
12. Superintendent's Monthly Narrative Report, April 1937, June 1937.
13. Superintendent's Monthly Narrative Report, September 1939.
14. Superintendent's Monthly Narrative Report, November 1954, August 1956.

## Chapter Ten: Historical-Educational and Interpretive Programs, 1934-1935

1. Petersburg Progress-Index, Oct. 16, 1934, Nov. 24, 1935.
2. Branch Spalding (1900-1980) also became superintendent of the Fredericksburg and Spotsylvania County Battlefields Memorial National Military Park. After leaving the National Park Service in 1942, he headed the English department at Episcopal High School in Alexandria, Va., was later appointed headmaster of Christchurch School in Christchurch, Va., and still later, founding headmaster of Broadwater Academy in Exmore, Va. For five years he was cashier of the Peoples' Bank of White Stone, Va.

He retired in 1968 and died at his home in Weems, Lancaster County, Va., Jan. 16, 1980.

3. Edward Steere (1898-1974) was later chief historian at Fredericksburg, where he commenced his research which developed into The Wilderness Campaign, published in 1960. Later he was transferred to Antietam and eventually became a historian in the Office of the Quartermaster General, where he wrote two books about the registration of graves of World War II. After his retirement in 1955, he wrote articles for Military Affairs, Quartermaster Review, and the Military Review, and contributed articles to the Encyclopedia Britannica and the Encyclopedia Americana.

4. Edward Avery Wyatt, IV (1910-1982), was named editor of the Progress-Index in 1940. He retired in 1975 but continued his newspaper affiliation as contributing editor. He served on the Virginia State Library Board and was a trustee of the Petersburg Battlefield Museum Corporation. In addition to writing book reviews and many articles and editorials on historical subjects for various publications, he was the author of John Daly Burk (1936), Along Petersburg Streets (1943), and Plantation Houses Around Petersburg (1955); and was coauthor, with James G. Scott, of Petersburg's Story: A History (1960).

5. Memorandum Report of Activities of Historical-Educational Staff, Petersburg National Military Park, 1933-1935, Library, Petersburg National Battlefield.

6. Petersburg Progress-Index, July 17, 1935.

7. January 1934 Report of the Modeling Department, Historical-Educational Staff, Petersburg National Military Park, Library, Petersburg National Battlefield.

8. This relief map should not be confused with the larger one built later and installed in the park museum in 1939.

#### Chapter Eleven: Interpretive Markers, Outdoor Exhibits, and Self-Guiding Tours

1. Superintendent's Monthly Narrative Report, October 1935; Petersburg Progress-Index, Dec. 7, 1935; Information on the Reproduction of the Mortar, "The Dictator," or "Petersburg Express," A 13-inch Sea-Coast Mortar Used in the Siege of Petersburg, Library files, Petersburg National Battlefield.

2. The 30-pdr. Parrott rifle was one of the seven guns and replica carriages received in 1953 from Shiloh National Military Park.

3. Joseph Mills Hanson (1877-1960) was born in Yankton, South Dakota, and saw service on the Mexican border, 1916-1917, as a captain in the South Dakota National Guard. He served in the American Expeditionary Forces, 1917-1919, as a captain in the 147th Field Artillery, and was later in

charge of the historical section at General Headquarters, A. E. F. He was also a founder of the American Legion. He entered the National Park Service as a historian in the early 1930s and retired in 1947 as superintendent of Manassas National Battlefield Park. Major Hanson was a founder of the District of Columbia Civil War Roundtable and in 1956 was awarded its Gold Medal. He wrote many articles for various publications, and among his books were The Conquest of the Missouri (1909), (co-author) Pilot Knob: Thermopolyae of the West (1914), The Marne: Historic and Picturesque (1922), and Bull Run Remembers (1953).

4. "An Ordnance National Park--Petersburg Earthworks to Mount Civil War Cannon Once More," Army Ordnance, XVII (January-February 1937), 223.

5. Superintendent's Monthly Narrative Report, June 1958.

#### Chapter Twelve: Interpretive Services and Visitation

1. Petersburg Progress-Index, Sept. 19, 1935.
2. Superintendent's Annual Report for the Fiscal Years 1938-1940, 1943.
3. Superintendent's Monthly Narrative Report, 1937-1955.
4. Petersburg Progress-Index, May 1, 1940.

#### Chapter Thirteen: Petersburg National Military Park and World War II

1. Superintendent's Monthly Narrative Report, 1939-1941.
2. Superintendent's Annual Report for the Fiscal Year 1943.
3. Petersburg Progress-Index, July 21, 1941.
4. Oscar F. Northington, Jr., to Bernice Stevens, May 18, 1943, files, Petersburg National Battlefield.
5. Superintendent's Monthly Narrative Report, July 1942, November 1946.
6. Northington to Stevens, May 18, 1943.
7. Ibid.; Superintendent's Narrative Report, July 1946.

#### Chapter Fourteen: Historic Building Sites - Centre Hill Mansion

1. Olsen and Wallace, Study of Taylor House Remains, Feb. 17, 1954.

2. James H. Bailey, Old Petersburg (Richmond: Hale Publishing, 1981), p. 99.
3. Henderson, Unredeemed City, pp. 13, 27, 47; Edward A. Wyatt, IV, Along Petersburg Streets (Richmond: Dietz Publishing Co., 1943), p. 26.
4. Visit of William Howard Taft President of the United States and Mrs. Taft, Petersburg, Virginia May 19, 1909 (Petersburg 1909); Embick, History of Third Division, Ninth Corps, pp. 98-100.
5. The Southside Virginia News, Petersburg, Va. May 20, 1937.
6. Superintendent's Annual Report for the Fiscal Years 1937-1950; Superintendent's Monthly Narrative Report, 1942-1952.
7. Walter Taliaferro McCandlish (1888-1961) was dedicated to Petersburg history, especially to the museum, at Centre Hill, and was an ardent student of the Civil War. He was chairman of Petersburg's Jamestown Festival Committee and worked diligently on its behalf in the production of the pageant, "The Cradle of the Cockade," and the observance of Homecoming Week, June 9-15, 1957.
8. Bailey, Old Petersburg, p. 99; Richmond Times-Dispatch, Dec. 27, 1981. The Petersburg Battlefield Museum Corporation dissolved in 1981.

#### Chapter Fifteen: Poplar Grove National Cemetery

1. Macrae, Americans At Home, p. 173.
2. For articles on the "Tombstone House," see the Petersburg Progress-Index, Nov. 19, 1967; and Richmond Times-Dispatch, May 14, 1978.
3. Olsen, Poplar Grove National Cemetery History, pp. 22-79 passim.

#### Epilogue: 30th Anniversary--1956

1. Richmond Times-Dispatch, July 2, 1956.
2. Petersburg Progress-Index, July 1, 5, 1956; Richmond News Leader, July 4, 1956.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

### Manuscripts

Blandford Church Interpretation Center, Petersburg Va.

Minute Book, 1866 - 1912, Ladies' Memorial Association.

Petersburg National Battlefield Park, Library

Commission, Petersburg National Military Park, Annual Reports, 1930 - 1931.

Crater register book, 1867 - c. 1901.

Friend house (Whitehill) notes, No. 25, Historians' files.

Information on the Reproduction of the Mortar, "The Dictator," or "Petersburg Express," A 13-inch Sea-Coast Mortar Used in the Siege of Petersburg.

Jordan house - Clermont notes, No. 13, Historians' files.

Lassiter, Francis R., Papers.

Memorandum Report of Activities of Historical-Educational Staff, Petersburg National Military Park, May 15-31, 1934.

Olsen, Herbert, Poplar Grove National Cemetery History, Petersburg National Military Park, Virginia, May 31, 1954.

Olsen, Herbert, and Wallace, Lee A., Jr., Study of the Taylor House remains, Petersburg National Military Park, Virginia, February 17, 1954.

Park History, 1932-1937.

Report of the Modeling Department, January 1934, Petersburg, Virginia, Civil Works Administration File, October 1933 - May 1934.

Smith, Franklin W., Collection.

Superintendent's Annual Report for the Fiscal Year 1936-1940, 1947.

Superintendent's Monthly Narrative Reports, 1936-1956.

### Government Publications

Executive Order 6166, Organization of Executive Agencies, Franklin D. Roosevelt, The White House, June 10, 1933. Washington, 1933.

National Archives and Records Service, comp. Compiled Service Record of Confederate Soldiers Who Served in Organizations for the State of Virginia, Microcopy No. 324. Washington: National Archives and Records Services, General Services Administration, 1961.

National Archives and Records Service. Federal Register.

U. S. Census. Statistical View of the United States, etc., Being a Compendium of the Seventh Census, etc. By James D. B. De Bow. Washington: A. O. P. Nicholson, Public Printer, 1854.

U. S. Congress. Biographical Directory of the American Congress, 1774-1971, 92d Cong., 1st Sess., Senate Doc. No. 92-8. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1971.

. Congressional Record

. House Committee on Military Affairs, National Military Park Near Petersburg, Va.: Hearings on H.R. 7817, 69th Cong., 1st Sess., Feb. 8, 1926.

U. S. Navy Department. Official Records of the Union and Confederate Natives in the War of the Rebellion. 30 vols. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1894-1922.

U. S. War Department. Atlas to Accompany the Official Records of the Union and Confederate Armies. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1895.

. The War of the Rebellion: A Compilation of the Official Records of the Union and Confederate Armies. 128 vols. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1880-1901.

Newspapers

Fort Lee, Va. Lee Traveler

Petersburg Daily Express

Petersburg Daily-Index

Petersburg Daily Index-Appeal

Petersburg Index

Petersburg Index-Appeal

Petersburg Progress-Index

Petersburg Southside Virginia News

Richmond News Leader

Richmond Times-Dispatch

Sprignfield, Mass. Daily Republican

Washington Post

Periodicals

American Arms Collector

Army & Navy Journal

Army Ordnance

Confederate Veteran

Frank Leslie's Illustrated Weekly Newspaper

Military Affairs

Richmond Magazine

Southern Historical Society Papers

United Daughters of the Confederacy Magazine

Virginia Cavalcade

Virginia Magazine of History and Biography

William and Mary College Quarterly Historical Magazine

Other Printed Works

Agassiz, George R., ed. Meade's Headquarters 1863-1865: Letters of Colonel Theodore Lyman From The Wilderness to Appomattox. Boston: Atlantic Monthly Press, 1922.

Anderson, Joseph R. Records of Service in the World War of V. M. I. Alumni and the their Alma Mater. Lexington, 1920.

Bailey, James H. Old Petersburg. Richmond: Hale Publishing Co.

\_\_\_\_\_. Petersburg in The Revolution. Petersburg: Bicentennial Commission (Petersburg, 1981).

Benson, Cornelius H. "Yank" and "Reb." A History of a Fraternal Visit by Lincoln Post No. 11. G. A. R., of Newark, N. J. to Robt E. Lee Camp No. 1, Confederate Veterans, and Phil Kearney [sic] Post, No. 10, G. A.

R., of Richmond, Va., October 15, to October 18th inclusive. Newark: M. H. Newhut, printer, 1884.

Bernard, George S., ed. and comp. War Talks of Confederate Veterans. Petersburg: Fenn & Owen, 1892.

Billings, John D. The History of the Tenth Massachusetts Battery of Light Artillery in the War of the Rebellion, 1862-1865. Boston: Arakelyan Press, 1909.

Boykin, Edward, Beefsteak Raid. New York: Funk & Wagnalls Co., 1960.

Brown, Phillip F. Reminiscences of the War of 1861-1865. Roanoke: Union Printing Co., c. 1912.

Brewer, James H. The Confederate Negro: Virginia's Craftsmen and Military Laborers, 1861-1865. Durham: Duke University Press, 1969.

Campbell, Charles, ed., The Bland Papers: Being A Selection From the Manuscripts of Colonel Therodoric Bland, Jr. 2 vols. Petersburg: Edmund & Jullian C. Ruffin, 1840-1843.

Confederate Southern Memorial Association, History of the Confederate Memorial Associations of the South. New Orleans: Confederate Southern Memorial Association, 1904.

Conwell, Russell H. Magnolia Journey: A Union Veteran Revisits the Former Confederate States. Edited by Joseph C. Carter. Southern Historical Publications No. 17. University: University of Alabama Press, 1974.

Davidson, Nora F. M. Cullings From the Confereracy 1862-1866. Washington: Rufus H. Darby Printing Co., 1903.

Durkin, Joseph T., S.J. Stephen R. Mallory: Confederate Navy Chief. Chapel Hill: University of Norh Carolina Press, 1954.

Edmunds, Pocahontas W. Virginians Out Front. Richmond: Whittet & Shep-  
person, 1972.

Embick, Milton A., ed. History of the Third Division Ninth Corps, Army of the Potomac. (Harrisburg): G. E. Authinbaugh, Printer to the State, 1913.

Evans, Clement A., ed. Confederate Military History. 12 vols. Atlanta: Confederate Publishing Co., 1899.

Gould, Joseph. The Story of the Forty-Eighth. Philadelphia: Arranged by F. H. Taylor; printed by Alfred M. Slocum Co., 1908.

Hagood, Johnson. Memoirs of the War of Secession. Columbia: State Co., 1910.

Harrison, M. Clifford. Home to the Cockade City. Richmond: House of Dietz, 1942.

Henderson, William D. Gilded Age City: Politics, Life and Labor in Petersburg, Virginia, 1874-1889. Washington: University Press of America, 1980.

\_\_\_\_\_. The Unredeemed City: Reconstruction in Petersburg, Va.: 1870-1875. Washington: University Press of America, 1977.

Hillman, Benjamin J. Monuments to Memories. Richmond: Virginia Civil War Commission, 1967.

Hopkins, William P. The Seventh Regiment Rhode Island Volunteers in The Civil War 1862-1865. Providence: Providence Press, 1903.

Humphreys, Andrew A. The Virginia Campaign of '64 and '65; The Army of the Potomac and the Army of the James. Campaigns of the Civil War, Vol. 7. New York: C. Scribner's Sons, 1883.

Jarratt's Hotel, A Guide to the Fortifications and Battlefields Around Petersburg. Petersburg: Daily Index Job Print., 1866.

\_\_\_\_\_. A Guide to the Fortifications and Battlefields Around Petersburg. Petersburg: J. B. Ege's Printing House, 1869.

Johnson, James L. The University Memorial Biographical Sketches of Alumni of the University of Virginia Who Fell in the Confederate War. Baltimore: Turnbull Brothers, 1871.

Johnson, Robert C., and Buel, Clarence C., eds. Battles and Leaders of the Civil War. 4 vols. New York: Century Co., 1888.

Lee, Ronald F. The Origin and Evolution of the National Military Park Idea. Washington: U. S. Department of the Interior, National Park Service, Office of Park Historic Preservation, 1973.

Lee, Susan P. Memoirs of William Nelson Pendleton, D. D. Philadelphia: J. P. Lippincott Co., 1893.

Logan, Mary. Reminiscences of the Civil War and the Reconstruction. Edited by George W. Adams. Carbondale, Ill.: Southern Illinois University Press, 1970.

Macrae, David. The Americans At Home. New York: E. P. Dutton & Co., 1952.

Mann, Ella Donan. Four Years in the Governor's Mansion of Virginia 1910-1914. Richmond: Dietz Press, 1937.

Massachusetts. Adjutant General. Massachusetts Soldiers, Sailors, and Marines in the Civil War. 8 vols. Norwood: Printed at Norwood Press, 1931-35.

National Cyclopedia of American Biography. 55 vols. to date. New York: J. T. White, Co., 1893-1970.

Pollock, Edward. Historical and industrial Guide to Petersburg, Virginia. Petersburg: Index-Appeal Printers, 1884.

Salmond, John A. The Civilian Conservation Corps, 1933-1942: A New Deal Case Study. Durham: Duke University Press, 1967.

Scott, James G., and Wyatt, Edward A., IV. Petersburg's Story: A History. Petersburg: Titmus Optical Co., 1960.

Shaw, Horace H. The First Maine Heavy Artillery 1862-1865. Portland, Me., 1903.

Sommers, Richard J. Richmond Redeemed: The Siege of Petersburg. New York: Doubleday & Co., 1981.

Stephenson, Jennie Friend. White Hill [sic] Veteran of the Wars 1781 - 1861-1861 - 1917-1918. My Father And His Household Before During And After The War, April 22, 1897. Privately published c. 1967.

Trowbridge, John T. The Desolate South 1865-1866. Edited by Gordon Carroll. New York: Duel, Sloan and Pearce, 1956.

Virginia Military Institute, Register of Former Cadets. Memorial Edition. Lexington, 1957.

Visit of William Howard Taft President of the United States and Mrs. Taft. Petersburg, Virginia May 19, 1909. Petersburg (1909).

West Point Foundation, Register of Graduates and Former Cadets United States Military Academy. Civil War Centennial Edition - 1. West Point, 1961.

Who Was Who in America. Chicago: Marquis Who's Who, Inc., 1968.

Wyatt, Edward A., IV. Along Petersburg Streets, Richmond: Dietz Publishing Co., 1943.

#### Unpublished Studies

Blades, Brooke S., and Cotter, John L. "Archaeological Test Excavations at the Hare House Site, Petersburg National Battlefield, January 1978." National Park Service, Mid-Atlantic Region, Office of Planning and Research. Multilithed.

Toms, Francis R. "The Petersburg National Battlefield Park." Paper submitted to Department of English, 1929, University of North Carolina, Chapel Hill, N.C. Typed.

Wilson, Charles I. "Archaeological Investigations and Excavations, Crater Area, Petersburg National Battlefield, Petersburg, Virginia," 1975. Paterson, N.J.: Historic Conservation & Interpretation, Inc., 1976. Multilithed.

### Interviews

#### Petersburg, Va.

David A. Lyon, Jr., January 1956.

David A. Lyon, III, January 1956, March 1, 1982.

Walter T. McCandlish, March 1954, January 1956.

Miss Anne V. Mann, January 1956.

Franklin W. Smith, January 1956.

A HISTORY OF PETERSBURG NATIONAL BATTLEFIELD

1957-1982

by

Martin R. Conway

## CONTENTS

INTRODUCTION . . . . .	1
GENERAL DEVELOPMENT AND INTERPRETATION . . . . .	4
FLANK AND DEFENSE ROADS . . . . .	18
THE FIVE FORKS AUTHORIZATION . . . . .	27
REAMS STATION DONATION PROPOSAL . . . . .	33
TEMPLE AVENUE EXTENSION . . . . .	35
APPOMATTOX MANOR . . . . .	37
LAND ACQUISITION . . . . .	42
RELATIONS WITH FORT LEE . . . . .	45
LAW ENFORCEMENT . . . . .	50
HICKORY HILL ROAD HOUSING PROJECT . . . . .	54
EARTHWORK PRESERVATION . . . . .	62
THE "DICTATOR" . . . . .	67
POPLAR GROVE NATIONAL CEMETERY . . . . .	71
APPENDIX A: PARK VISITATION, 1967-1981 . . . . .	72
APPENDIX B: PARK PERSONNEL, 1928-1982 . . . . .	73
APPENDIX C: PARK LEGISLATION . . . . .	81
ILLUSTRATIONS . . . . .	87

## Introduction

This part of "A History of the Petersburg National Battlefield" is a continuation--in a limited fashion--of the outstanding work started by Lee A. Wallace when he was a historian at Petersburg.

The late 1950s to the early 1970s were extraordinarily exciting years in planning and developing the battlefield. The total planning concept--with the exception of land acquisition--came in a neat package under Mission 66 whereby a relatively underdeveloped and disjointed park became an outstanding unit of the National Park System: a model of Park Service excellence in planning and design and commitment. Without Mission 66, Petersburg would have most likely been developed piecemeal but perhaps nowhere as boldly conceived nor as grand as under this program.

Nevertheless, the basic element was there from the start as the park abounded in both natural and historic resources: earthworks nicely preserved since the days of the Civil War; fields, meadows, streams and forests of remarkable beauty; and historic sites where exciting stories awaited telling--places like Battery 5, Fort Stedman, Meade Station, the Crater, Fort Morton, Fort Haskell, and the place where men of the First Maine Heavy Artillery made that memorable charge.

I was fortunate in being superintendent during the time everything came together (1968-1972); and because of it, I developed a deep appreciation for the extraordinary talents of those in the Service who came before me and who were responsible for the transformation: men like Chet Brooks, Lee Wallace, Bill Everhart, Marc Sagan, Russ Hendrickson, Pete Shedd, Al Manucy--to name a few.

I was also highly impressed with the people of the Harpers Ferry Interpretive Design Center from their publications to their designs of exhibits and waysides--a splendid, highly professional group whom I came to greatly admire.

About the time of this new awareness of the battlefield, the city of Petersburg began realizing its potential as a place of historic significance. This took on a life of its own, including the restoration of many of the city's fine old homes and buildings, the establishment of new museums, the development of historical tours, and the promotion of tourism. By raising the consciousness of the community, the Park Service, without realizing it, had much to do with revitalizing the city's historical image.

Finally, it is difficult to be completely fair and objective in writing this work when ten years ago I served at the park as historian and later as superintendent. I may be excessive in explaining details of those things that were accomplished during my tenure. On the other hand, I do attempt to point out decisions of mine that were not the best that could have been made, such as building a sutler's store with the objective of selling to visitors every type of item offered the soldiers--and some that were not, like Sutler Store Sarsaparilla.

It is at times a painful process to review records of one's tenure, to look at some of the decisions made that then seemed perfectly reasonable, but in hindsight were not the best that could have been made.

On the other hand, in the perspective of time, there is immense pleasure in seeing those decisions--although they may have been unpopular at the time--that proved the best.

Anyway, my years at Petersburg were fun, and exciting, and happy. It was a time and a place that lingers and glows in memory.

## GENERAL DEVELOPMENT AND INTERPRETATION

### A. Mission 66 Development Program

Mission 66 was an ambitious 10-year program to develop and improve every park in the System by 1966, the 50th anniversary of the National Park Service; and because of it, Petersburg National Battlefield was to undergo the most intensive development of its history.

Initial plans for the park called for:

1. A new visitor center to include administrative offices;
2. Development of an interpretive tour to begin at Battery 5 and at the Crater;
3. New entrance road and a bridge over Highway 36;
4. A new maintenance area; and
5. Three employee houses.

With the exception of the three houses, which were not built, everything was carried out with imaginative planning that brought out the best qualities of an already lovely and interesting park. Total construction costs would be more than one million dollars.

The initial planning meeting was held at the park on March 11-12, 1957. Attending the meeting were Elbert Cox, Robert Perkins, and James Holland from Region One (Richmond); Edward Zimmer and Harve Cornell from Eastern Office of Design and Construction; Roy Appleman, Leo Diederick, and Merel Sager from the Washington Office; and Superintendent Bernard Campbell from the park.<sup>1</sup>

---

1. Ltr., Diederick to Chief, Div. of Resource Planning, March 25, 1957, Petersburg File, Washington National Record Center.

The problem then was where to locate the new visitor center and the extent and direction of the interpretive tour within the park. The consensus was to locate the visitor center at Battery 5 from where the tour would proceed to the Crater, where an exit would be provided.

It was also agreed that visitors should have access over a park road to the outlying "shoestring" park lands (Flank and Defense roads) and that a small acreage of additional land would be required to permit such an optional tour.<sup>2</sup>

It is interesting to note that the optional tour to Flank and Defense roads was never pursued with vigor, if at all. Regional Director Elbert Cox had other plans for these roads which at the time, he apparently never mentioned.

The first construction project under Mission 66 was the Highway 36 entrance-exit roads and overpass (Project 2 A 6). Malpass Construction Co., Norfolk, Virginia, completed the work in July 1967, at a cost of \$322,000.<sup>3</sup>

#### B. Visitor Center

Although the \$220,000 visitor center (designed by Eastern Office of Design and Construction and built by Walthall Construction Co., Colonial Heights, Va.) was not completed until May 1967, it was nevertheless part of Mission 66. Beautifully landscaped, the octagonal 69-foot-wide brick structure resembles a fortification, thus complementing the historic earthworks of Battery 5. It was

---

2. Ibid.

3. Telephone interview, Lucia Camper to Martin Conway, July 20, 1982.

one of the finest visitor centers in the National Park System.<sup>4</sup> Its warm and attractive exhibit area interprets the siege from the standpoint of themes as opposed to a chronological order of battle or military events. The exhibit surrounds a circular enclosure that further interprets the nine-month siege by the use of overhead projections onto a black-lighted map.

What made the Petersburg visitor center different in the way of the Park Service approach to exhibit design was that the exhibits were designed before the building. Before that, the building usually came first, the exhibits then being adapted to it.

Nino Belfiore, an exhibit designer from Washington, D.C., was contracted to do the exhibits; Peter Kittl of the Interpretive Design Center designed the moat; Russell Hendrickson, who at the time headed the Eastern Museum Laboratory, is credited with the initial concept of the overhead projection with Exhibit Designer David McLean designing it; and E.O.D.C. designed the building around the exhibits.<sup>5</sup>

### C. Interpretation

Before Mission 66, the park's interpretive program consisted of a small visitor center at the Crater; two homemade audio stations, one at the Crater, the other at Fort Stedman; and seven exhibit cases installed at major points of interest throughout the park. Mission 66 was to change all of that.

---

4. Russell Hendrickson to Martin Conway, conversation at Harpers Ferry, 1970.

5. Telephone interview, David McLean to Martin Conway, July 22, 1982.

Upon completion of the visitor center, Waynesboro Nurseries of Waynesboro, Virginia, was awarded the landscaping contract for \$12,500. In subsequent years, Superintendent Conway ordered from this nursery hundreds of junipers, some red maples, poplars, and white pine for additional visitor center landscaping and for screening Highway 36. (The crape myrtle in the center of the Crater parking area was planted at this time.)<sup>6</sup>

In addition to the visitor center, a 10-stop battlefield tour from Battery 5 to the Crater was developed. This was made possible by the Highway 36 overpass, the entrance roads from Highway 36, and the one-way road system through the park.

More than 50 interpretive waysides (throughout the park), six audio stations (at Battery 5, Meade Station trail, Fort Stedman, Fort Morton, Tunnel Entrance, and the Crater), and four Sidney King paintings (Encampment, Fort Stedman, 1st Maine Monument, and Fort Morton) augmented the tour. Historian Edwin C. Bearss insured the historical accuracy of the painting; Park Historian Martin Conway wrote the audio narratives (he considers Fort Stedman the best), and Edward Bierly of Harpers Ferry Center designed the waysides.

Subsequently, the number of audio stations was increased from six to eight by addition of one for the 1st Maine Heavy Artillery and a second describing the Confederate Crater counterattacks. There are two Sidney King paintings not displayed on the field--one interpreting action at the Crater and the other at Fort Gregg.

These Mission 66 accomplishments were further expanded when the park

---

6. Telephone interview, Camper with Conway, Sept. 20, 1982.

historian became the superintendent. Conway was thus able to carry out additional interpretive plans, and between 1969 and 1972, the following interpretive developments were pursued:

1. Reconstruction of a soldiers' hut and interpretation onsite of the soldier's life;
2. Reconstruction of a section of the U.S. Military Railroad at Meade Station;
3. Development of a self-guided tour-outline of Lee's retreat from Petersburg to Appomattox;
4. Greater emphasis placed on the role of black troops during the siege;
5. Development of a Coehorn mortar firing demonstration employing a solid projectile to increase the demonstration's effectiveness;
6. Reconstruction of a sutler's store;
7. Development of an artillery firing demonstration, fully manned and complete with limber and 6-horse team;
8. Development of a trail for the blind at Stop 3 using braille interpretive markers (relocated by Superintendent Hakel in 1974 to near the visitor center);
9. Expansion and relocation of the artillery display midway between the visitor center and Battery 5;
10. Placement of 3 additional artillery pieces in Battery 5; and
11. Replacement of the concrete model of the "Dictator" with a Civil War period 13-inch seacoast mortar.

In addition, a small picnic area, between Stops 3 and 4, was developed on land earlier used by the park as a dump.<sup>7</sup>

In 1973, Historian Neil Mangum added an earthwork reconstruction at Stop 3, and a field hospital was equipped and staffed. Cavalrymen were accounted and

---

7. Recollections of Martin Conway, July 1982; ltr., Hakel to Conway, Oct. 29, 1982.

women recruited as the living history program was expanded during Superintendent Larry Hakel's administration. More than 10 years later, the interpretive programs listed above continue--indeed many have been expanded and improved.

The sutler store was constructed with the idea of selling to visitors reproductions of all the articles sutlers sold to soldiers--from cookware to tobacco twists. This proved unwieldy and in some cases inappropriate, as when "Sutler Store Sarsaparilla" was specially bottled. Included on its label was a bare-bosomed Indian Maiden (designed tastefully, it caused no complaints) and a statement that because the item was sold only at Petersburg National Battlefield, the bottle should be taken home as a souvenir. This worked well in curtailing littering.

Today (1982) the sutler store continues to sell reproductions on a much reduced scale, including tin cups, inkwells, powdered ink, pens, stationery, and the "Harpers WEEKLY Magazine." Cold apple cider is also offered.

During summer and on some weekends in spring and fall, eleven seasonal employees in Civil War period uniforms interpret the soldier's life and demonstrate the firing of period weapons. In addition, seven interpreters are required for the artillery demonstration and to handle the horses. Walking tours from the visitor center to Battery 5 are conducted four times daily.<sup>8</sup>

In 1977, the Battery 5 trail was redesigned and steps and landing plat-

---

8. Telephone interview, Christopher Calkins to Martin Conway, July 7, 1982; ltrs., Hakel to Bearss, Sept. 15, 1982, and Hakel to Conway, Oct. 29, 1982.

forms were built to overlook the Dictator site. The work was contracted to Short Construction Company of Petersburg, and cost \$60,000.<sup>9</sup>

#### D. Tunnel Entrance

The Superintendent's Monthly Report of July 1936 contains brief mention of the need to restore the tunnel entrance at Petersburg. Three months later, on October 7, 1936, the Regional Office in Richmond approved such a project.<sup>10</sup>

Discussions were held between Superintendent J. Walter Coleman and Staff Historian Roy E. Appleman during January 1937, "relative to a suitable plan for treatment of the tunnel."<sup>11</sup> Although a preliminary engineering report was submitted in August 1937,<sup>12</sup> the project was placed on hold until March 6, 1940, when it was cancelled.<sup>13</sup>

After 19 years of nothing happening, severe deterioration of the area had accelerated. Steps leading to the tunnel were in need of repair, and erosions, especially in areas of tunnel cave-ins, were becoming extremely severe.<sup>14</sup>

On September 23, 1959, the Regional Office wrote Director Conrad Wirth under the subject of "Preservation of Petersburg Tunnel and Crater":

In view of the immediacy of the question of restoration of the Petersburg tunnel and Crater, as pointed out in Mr. R.F. Lee's

---

9. Telephone interview, Camper with Conway, Oct. 5, 1982.

10. Ltr., E. M. Lyle to J. W. Coleman, Oct. 1936, WNRC.

11. Superintendents' Monthly Report, Petersburg, NMP, January 1937, WNRC.

12. Proposed Restoration of the tunnel leading to the Crater, Frank Whitehouse, May 1937, WNRC.

13. Memo., Thomas Harrison to Superintendent, Petersburg, April 28, 1959, WNRC.

14. Ibid.

memorandum of September 8, a conference was set in this office for September 15. Attending were Superintendent Brooks and Park Historian Harrison, of Petersburg National Military Park, and Regional Director Cox and Messrs. [ J.C.] Harrison and [James] Holland of this office.

The proposals detailed in the attached copy of Mr. Brooks' memorandum of September 17 represent, in effect, a report on the discussion at that meeting. As there was general agreement on all points, the views expressed by Mr. Brooks are likewise the views of the Region One Office.<sup>15</sup>

At the meeting Superintendent Chester Brooks insisted on changing the interpretation of the Crater Story to a more logical sequence:

Superintendent Brooks, in these words, made a strong case for changing the sequence for interpretation of the Crater story:

When I first visited Petersburg National Military Park over a year ago I had no idea I would one day be Superintendent of the area. In visiting the Crater and tunnel site at that time I came to the conclusion interpretation was carried out in reverse order; first one showed the visitor the Crater--or the result of the explosion and then we led the visitor to the tunnel entrance site. I propose a reorientation of the visitor. Under the MISSION 66 program a parking overlook is proposed that will present the story of the Crater in general terms, i. e., the Union problem, the Pennsylvania miners' solution, viz., the tunnel and the explosion which created the Crater. The road would then lead to a parking area near the tunnel entrance and Crater site. This would necessitate no change in MISSION 66 except a slight relocation of the parking area. From the parking area a one-way loop trail would lead the visitor to the covered way and the tunnel entrance site and then generally along the present trail to the Crater and back to the parking area.<sup>16</sup>

Brooks' position was so sensible that no one disagreed. The parking area was relocated on the plans, and in 1964 it was built as part of an extensive road project (awarded to Short Construction Co., Petersburg), that included paving Siege Road, obliterating Colquitt Salient Road, reconstructing Prince George Courthouse Road, and reconstructing Fort Urmston-Fort Fisher Road.

---

15. Memo., Acting Regional Director to Director, Sept. 23, 1959, WNRC.

16. Ltr., Brooks to Regional Director, Sept. 17, 1959, WNRC.

This work was preceded a year earlier by construction of the overpass bridge over the Norfolk & Western Railroad. Before that, to reach Siege Road from the Crater Visitor Center, visitors were compelled to leave the park, cross the railroad over Highway 460, and re-enter on a road behind the site of Fort Morton.

But it was another four years before plans were approved for restoration of the tunnel entrance.<sup>17</sup> Park Historian James Kretschmann, who was placed in charge of the project by Superintendent John Willett, disagreed with the plans. He argued that the tunnel should be in the shape of a trapezoid rather than rectangular as proposed. Based on sound historical documentation, Kretschmann was convincing and the plans were changed.<sup>18</sup> Other changes included eliminating plans to light the tunnel and for installing a painting of the partition (part of the ventilating system) at the end of the 12-foot restored tunnel.

In 1967, the tunnel entrance and trail were finally reconstructed as part of the project that included constructing the Battery 5 trail and resurfacing the Meade Station trail. Garrett Construction Company of Richmond, Virginia, was awarded the job for \$25,000. That same year, interpretive signs and audio systems were installed throughout the park by Walthall Construction of Colonial Heights, Virginia, for \$18,000.<sup>19</sup>

Then, in the spring of 1974, the tour road in the vicinity of the Crater was realigned, and in March 1975, following heavy rains, sections of the tunnel began sloughing.

---

17. NB-Pet.-3010A, Reconstructin of Entrance to Crater Tunnel, Eastern Office of Design and Construction, 1964, WNRC.

18. Memo., Superintendent to Regional Director, April 23, 1964, WNRC.

19. Telephone interview, Camper with Conway, Sept. 20, 1982; ltr., Hakel to Conway, Oct. 29, 1982.

#### E. Vista Clearing

Vegetation was cleared and vistas were opened during the mid-1970s. The most important of these from the perspective of interpretation, as well as scale, was the clearing of the area between the Crater and Fort Morton (the 14-Gun Battery). This was done by contract and, as former Superintendent Elms recalls, there were numerous problems in its implementation.<sup>20</sup>

#### F. Acquisition of and Positioning of Cannon Carriages

During 1962 and 1964, twelve 12-pounder cast-iron field carriages, ordered earlier by the Service at a cost of \$11,500, were received from the Department of Correction at Lorton, Virginia. They were mounted with Civil War-period guns and emplaced throughout the battlefield to mark battery positions at Forts Haskell, Stedman and Friend, Batteries 5 and 6, and Colquitt's Salient. Those in the latter position were subsequently relocated to Battery 5.<sup>21</sup>

#### G. Publications

The first comprehensive work on the siege of Petersburg that was offered as a sales item at the park was Campaign for Petersburg by Park Historian Richard Lykes. It was printed in 1951 by the Superintendent of Documents as part of the National Park Service History Series. In 1970, Writer-Editor Raymond Baker of the Interpretive Design Center redesigned the booklet including additional photographs, text and caption revisions, and a new cover.

---

20. Telephone interview, Elms with Bearss, Sept. 2, 1982; ltr., Hakel with Bearss, Sept. 15, 1982.

21. Ibid.

In 1956, the Petersburg park folder was the standard 6-page, 6X8-inch format in black and white. This was changed to a 12-page, 4X9 format also in black and white (in 1963 it was blue returning to black and white the following year). In 1967, the present 3 1/4 X 5 5/8-inch mini-folder in duo-colors made its appearance. (The unigrid format of four colors is in the planning stage and may be ready for distribution by the mid-1980s.)<sup>22</sup>

In 1976, the park received copies of an Earthworks Preservation Guide by William S. Ambrose, a graduate student from Clemson University.

The Middle Atlantic Regional Office in 1980 published "City Pointer," an informational sheet intended to inform the local community of goings on at Appomattox Manor and the plans the Park Service had for the area.

In 1982, Park Ranger Ella Rayburn wrote and designed Interim City Point Folder, the Park Service's first interpretive folder for Appomattox Manor. The folder was published by the park with donated funds provided by Eastern Park and Monument Association.<sup>23</sup>

#### H. Off-Site Interpretive Thrusts

Among the more successful interpretive programs is the annual bus trip along the route of Lee's retreat from Petersburg to Appomattox. Begun in 1972 in cooperation with Richard Bland College, the one-day trip, conducted by park historians, is scheduled in early April. In 1982, it included nearly 100 people at a fee of \$15 each, which included bus fare and lunch at Appomattox Court House. Stops along the route are made at Amelia Court

---

22. Telephone conversation, Raymond Baker to Martin Conway, July 1982.

23. Telephone interview, John Davis with Martin Conway, Sept. 14, 1982.

House, Saylors Creek, Farmville, and Cumberland Church.<sup>24</sup>

#### I. City Assists Park Interpretive Program

Confronted by the probability of a reduction of interpretive personnel brought about by curtailment of park funding, the city of Petersburg in 1970 came to the park's assistance by agreeing to hire some five interpreters. The park would select and supervise these employees. This agreement continued until 1976 and may well be the only time a local community gave direct financial assistance to an area of the National Park System.<sup>25</sup>

In addition, the city provided the park with publicity and recognition of its national significance and importance in community planning. While superintendent Larry Hakel was asked to serve on these Crater Planning District's committees--transportation, open space and recreation. He also served on the city of Petersburg's committees on historic preservation and tourism, and on the Fort Lee advisory committee.

#### J. Lengthening Railroad Underpass

In 1968, the Seaboard Coast Line notified the Park Service of its intention of expanding its yard facility at Petersburg. The railroad requested that the underpass near Fort Wadsworth be lengthened accordingly as part of the agreement between the railroad and the Service when the underpass was initially constructed. To lengthen the underpass 195 feet, Wilkins Construction Company of Amherst, Virginia, was awarded the contract by the Park Service for \$472,000 in 1970. The work was completed the next year.<sup>26</sup>

---

24. Telephone conversation, John Davis to Martin Conway, Sept. 15, 1982.

25. Telephone interview, Camper to Conway, Sept. 20, 1982; ltr., Hakel to Conway, Oct. 29, 1982.

26. Telephone interview, Camper with Conway, Sept. 20, 1982.

#### K. Highway 36 Entrance Sign

In 1967, the park entrance sign was built by Wartz Construction Company of Petersburg for \$3,000. The sign is positioned at the park entrance on Highway 36.<sup>27</sup> Six years later, in July 1973, new entrance signs were erected.

#### L. Maintenance

The park's first maintenance area was on the site of the CCC camp near Fort Stedman. A 50-foot cinder block building built by the Park Service after World War II and five smaller CCC buildings served the maintenance area until 1967, when the present maintenance area was completed under Mission 66.<sup>28</sup>

Unfortunately, most of the CCC buildings are gone; the cinder block building remains, serving today the needs of rangers and interpreters for offices, a tack-room, and a storage facility. Also extant are structures employed as a ranger residence and its dependencies. In 1975 improvements were made to the area's sanitary facilities--the sand filter was replaced by a septic tank.

Located at the park entrance, the new maintenance complex (designed by the NPS' Eastern Office of Design and Construction and built by Walthall Construction Co., Colonial Heights, Va., at a cost of \$78,500) is compact, well designed, and nicely screened from visitor view. Its two brick buildings--one 105 X 36 feet and the second 78 X 30 feet--face each other 35 feet apart. One is a garage and storage facility, where the fire trucks and fire-fighting equipment are kept.

---

27. Ibid.; Ltr., Hakel to Conway, Oct. 27, 1982.

28. Telephone conversation, recollection of Lee Wallace to Martin Conway, July 8, 1982; ltr., Hakel with Conway, Oct. 29, 1982.

In 1981, Daugherty & Edwards of Petersburg, at a cost of \$22,000, rehabilitated the cinder block structure which had been used by the rangers and interpreters since 1968 for storage. Now called the Operations Building, it is employed as a park training and operations center for seasonal personnel.<sup>29</sup>

---

29. Telephone interview, Camper with Conway, Oct. 5, 1982.

### FLANK AND DEFENSE ROADS

The question of transferring a park road to state jurisdiction first arose within the Service in 1942 at the time 739 acres of park land were transferred back to Camp Lee. Only Flank Road was being considered; Defense Road was yet to be built.

The problem then--as it was increasingly to become--was one of insufficient land to protect park resources. Most of the land that was to comprise Flank and Defense Roads--along with the adjacent earthworks--was donated to the Federal Government with most of the owners retaining egress right to their properties.

As the urban sprawl continued and suburbs expanded, land adjacent to both roads became increasingly subdivided into building lots. This in turn placed considerable pressure on the Service to grant additional egress rights to the new property owners. The problem was further compounded by the Service's failure to develop and maintain a standard policy on the matter: Some superintendents granted special-use permits to use park lands as driveways, others flatly refused.

This problem with property owners resulted in Assistant Director Hillory Tolson's proposal in 1948 to transfer Flank Road to the state while the adjacent earthworks and fortifications remained under Park Service jurisdiction.<sup>1</sup> Based on this, a group of interested land owners petitioned the boards of supervisors of the two counties involved for approval of the transfer. Prince George

---

1. Tolson to Watkins, Sept. 21, 1948, Petersburg File, Washington National Record Center.

County approved the motion, Dinwiddie County rejected it.<sup>2</sup>

Public opinion appeared to be against the transfer. A leading group of city officials made it clear to Superintendent George Emery that relinquishment of the road was to many, an indication of decreased Service interest in the area, and that putting the land to other uses would be breaking faith with the people responsible for the donations.<sup>3</sup> Acting Regional Director Elbert Cox and Superintendent Emery, however, agreed to continue with the plan but to wait until "completion of the road project, at which time the Dinwiddie County board might conceivably see the situation differently."<sup>4</sup>

Four years later, in 1954, Regional Director Cox, in a move to transfer both Flank and the now completed Defense Road, wrote to Superintendent Floyd Taylor stating that the intent of Congress was to transfer to the states certain approach roads within the Park System. Flank and Defense Roads, in his opinion, were among those included. He asked the superintendent to review the matter and to take preliminary steps to initiate the action.<sup>5</sup>

Superintendent Taylor strongly disagreed that the roads should be transferred. He replied:

I am of the feeling that every reason which dictated the Service's decision to "keep the roads" still continues with even stronger justification. It has now been an issue and both sides have spoken. There is no known current agitation locally to reopen the issue. Even if

---

2. Ltr., Supt. to Reg. Dir., July 20, 1950, Pet. File, WNRC.

3. Ltr., Supt. to Reg. Dir., Aug. 11, 1950, Pet. File, WNRC.

4. Ltr., Act. Reg. Dir. to Supt., July 27, 1950, Pet. File, WNRC.

5. Ltr., Reg. Dir. to Supt., Aug. 13, 1954, Pet. File, WNRC.

we favored the transfer of roads, it will never be possible within the lifetime of numerous staunch individuals who have and can continue to muster sufficient support to defeat the plan. The moral obligation cannot be easily erased and we are currently making greater and greater use of the roads in question, as a part of the interpretive tour, and any relinquishment of the roads to permit unrestricted travel would certainly diminish if not destroy this significant and large section of the over-all Park Tour Route.<sup>6</sup>

More than 10 years passed before there were any further attempts to transfer the roads. But keeping Flank and Defense Roads under the administration of the National Park Service was not to be; relinquishing the roads was about to happen and it happened because three circumstances jelled at the same time:

1. Local governments willing and anxious to accept ownership;
2. Favorable acceptance by park management; and
3. A lack of public involvement.

Had any of these factors been otherwise, the roads would never have been transferred. This is what occurred.

In the mid-1960s, the city of Petersburg made known its intent to expand its boundaries south into Prince George County, an area that would include all of Defense Road and most of Flank Road. The state of Virginia eventually approved the expansion as proposed even though the county fought hard for its repeal.

About that time, City Manager Roy Ash accepted Superintendent John Willett's offer of transfer, subject, of course, to City Council's approval. This was followed by a Memorandum of Agreement that was drawn in the Regional Office

---

6. Ltr., Supt. to Reg. Dir., Aug. 26, 1954, Pet. File, WNRC.

in Richmond.

No local issue was raised at the time, and the question of why a municipality would want to assume responsibility for nearly 6 miles of roadway that was already being beautifully maintained and adequately patrolled by the Federal Government was never aired. One reason perhaps was that the city's bold plan to annex adjacent county territory dominated the news as well as the concerns and judgments of its leading citizens. For those who supported the transfer, the time was ideal.

Upon Congressman Watkins Abbitt's agreement to sponsor the bill, Superintendent Willet and Regional Director Cox traveled to Washington to present their supporting arguments to assistant Director Howard Baker. On learning of this meeting, historians in the Washington office became justifiably outraged, not only by the proposal to give away historic resources, but by being bypassed in the decision-making process.

On June 15, 1966, Historian Edwin C. Bearss wrote:

We feel that such action by the National Park Service will emasculate the Petersburg story. Except for the attack of July 30 at the Crater, all Union movements aimed at compelling the Army of Northern Virginia to abandon Petersburg from June 18, 1864, were directed against the Confederate right. The loss of Flank and Defense Roads will defeat the purpose of acquiring the area of Five Forks because we will have given up vital ground in telling the story of ten months of Union effort to turn Lee's right.

Along these roads are the best preserved earthworks in the battlefield, including Fort Fisher, the largest Civil War fort in the United States. Experience at Vicksburg, where land was conveyed to the city with a reservation that the city fathers were to maintain these lands in a "Park-like manner," has shown that real estate developers will lose little time in calling in their bulldozers and leveling the earthworks as soon as they are no longer protected by the Service.<sup>7</sup>

---

7. Ltr., Bearss to Chief Historian, June 15, 1966, Pet. File, WNRC.

Historian Roy E. Appleman added:

The whole proposal cannot be justified historically, and it points up the present failing of the NPS to have and use a responsible evaluating body at the Washington office to consider and advise on such matters.<sup>8</sup>

In a three-page memorandum to Director George B. Hartzog, Regional Director Elbert Cox replied:

I appreciate the opportunity to offer explanation and comment concerning position papers by Mr. Appleman and Mr. Bearss who believe that the proposal to transfer portions of Flank and Defense Roads in Petersburg National Battlefield is a mistake.

I believe that I understand the reasoning presented by Messrs. Appleman and Bearss. On the basis of historical evaluation, I would be entirely in accord with their recommendation. When it comes to making administrative determinations in which other factors must be weighed--over-all value of historic features in presenting the interpretive story for which the Park was established, operating costs for maintenance and interpretation, and certain other relationships, such as public relations--I believe that our conclusions are valid.

I am aware of the basic responsibility of the National Park Service for Historical preservation. I have been concerned along with others about the process of resource erosion which has occurred in many of our historical areas, especially in the Civil War battlefields. The hard reality is that the narrow strips of land acquired initially by the War Department were minimal at the time and became increasingly inadequate as urbanization, industrial development, and similar changes occur. As a matter of fact, the Master Plan concept for many of our historical areas, particularly Petersburg and Fredericksburg, in the thirties proposed greatly increased acreage beyond what we presently own or expect to acquire. Land acquisition necessary to support a proper park development could have been accomplished twenty years ago, but funds were never available. In evaluating a situation such as that at Petersburg today, we face an entirely different set of conditions than existed in the thirties.

The campaign involves over 170 square miles of battlefields, both major and minor. It has long been recognized that it would be neither feasible nor practical for the Federal Government to own or control the major portion of this property. Of the eighteen battles and military events concerned with the siege of Petersburg, only three, the opening battle (which set the stage for the siege), the battle of the Crater (the most unique in the war), and the battle of Fort Stedman (Lee's last offensive) have substantial areas within the Park boundaries. These three areas we believe to be the most important and significant in the Park for both preservation

---

8. Ltr., Appleman to Chief, Div. of Interpretation, June 22, 1966, Pet. File WNRC.

and meaningful interpretation. These are also the areas which receive by far the most legitimate visitor use.<sup>9</sup>

That memorandum may have placed a self-imposed gag order on further opposition within the Service. Nearly six years passed without any evidence of any opposition from any source. In fact, it was seven months after Congress authorized the transfer, that Washington-based historians made inquiry as to the status of the transfer proposal.<sup>10</sup>

Superintendent Conway, who came after Willett, favored the transfer. He believed that since the earthworks would remain under the protection of Federal law, they would continue to be looked after by the Park Service. He was concerned that increasing amounts of park resources were being committed to maintaining and patrolling roads that had become heavily used urban thoroughfares with little use by park visitors. He did insist, however, that, because of the area's major historical importance, Fort Wadsworth should be retained by the Service, which it was.

The Act of April 11, 1972 (92-272), had authorized the transfer, and on February 8, 1973, Superintendent Larry Hakel presented the deed to City Manager Lewis Z. Johnston. (A copy of the subject act is found in the Appendices.) As to be expected, the preliminaries to the transfer required much time and effort on the part of the principals in the wording of the deed. Following the transfer, there were many discussions, meetings, and onsite inspections with city officials, planning commissions, and property owners on interpretation of the deed and the National Park Service's intent.

The concerns of many historians that once transferred, the earthworks would be abused by Park Service irresponsibility toward its trust in lands no

---

9. Ltr., Cox to Hartzog, July 27, 1966, Pet. File, WNRC.

10. Ltr., Harry Pfanz to Robert Utley, Nov. 17, 1972, Pet. File, WNRC.

longer under its direct management, were quickly laid to rest. Quite early, an alert and conscientious superintendent, Wallace B. Elms, demonstrated that the Service takes seriously that trust especially where it was stated: "no new streets, entrance drives, or other developments shall be constructed in such a manner as to adversely affect existing forts, historic earthworks or other historic features."

The original legislative support data for the transfer of the roads erred in stating that all of Flank and Defense Roads were within the city limits of Petersburg; a 1.2-mile section of Flank Road was in Dinwiddle County. State and county officials agreed to accept this section of the road on condition that the protection in perpetuity of the earthworks would in no way be stipulated in the deed of transfer. County officials indicated that, instead of maintaining the area in a park-like condition, they would sell the land not needed for roads to private landowners. Charles Marshall, director of the NPS Virginia State Office, thereupon recommended the road be retained by the Service:

Following our meeting with the County officials Superintendent Hakel, Pete Shedd and I made a windshield inspection of the 1.2-mile section of Flank Road. We found that there would be no way for us to grant even the minimum required right-of-way to the State without giving up a substantial amount of earthworks which would fall within the right-of-way.

In view of the strong position we have taken elsewhere on the preservation of park values threatened by highway development, and in view of our obligation to the Congress and the public to protect historical remains, we concluded that the long term interest of the public and the Service dictates that we not transfer the 1.2-mile section of Flank Road to another jurisdiction.<sup>11</sup>

Some two years after the transfer, Superintendent Elms unofficially learned that the city planned a nursing home on property adjacent to Flank Road and had plans to cut a culvert through the earthworks there for a sewer line.

---

<sup>11</sup>. Ltr., Dir. V.S.O. to Dir, Northeast Region, March 26, 1973, P.N.B., ltr., Hakel to Conway, Oct. 29, 1982.

Elms immediately notified the regional office, resulting in a letter from Regional Director Chester Brooks to City Manager Lewis Johnston that approved the project provided that the sewer line were tunneled under the earthworks, not through it; also that the city keep the Park Service informed of any future projects that might affect any of the transferred earthworks.<sup>12</sup>

As a result the city notified the Service of its plans to realign Flank Road at the Highway 301 intersection. This was subsequently approved as it in no way impacted nearby Fort Davis.

The city, however, in an apparent act of defiance, cut through the earthworks for the sewer line without notifying the park. An outraged Superintendent Elms requested that the Solicitor draft a letter to the city on the legal ramifications of the city's action; also that a policy meeting be held with the Regional Director to clarify the responsibility assumed by both parties, when the roads were transferred.<sup>13</sup>

As a result, the city was duly informed:

1. That the City of Petersburg has the responsibility to comply with the law;
2. That the National Park Service will continue to monitor city programs affecting the transferred land; and
3. That the city should apply to have the transferred earthworks added to the National Register of Historic Places.<sup>14</sup>

In 1979, Superintendent Elms again became concerned about the possibility that Flank Road would be used for heavy commercial traffic, the result of a proposed factory complex to be built about a quarter of a mile from the

---

12. Ltr., Brooks to Johnston, Jan. 1976, Pet. File, WNRC.

13. Ltr., Elms to files, Aug. 20, 1976, P.N.B.

14. Ibid. As of 1981, the deeded earthworks were not listed in the National Register. This indicates that the city had not made application for such action. (Telephone interview, Karen Rehm to Conway, Oct. 26, 1982.)

road. The city subsequently informed the Service of its "commitment to improve Halifax Road for heavy truck traffic and to preserve the historic nature of Flank Road."<sup>15</sup>

Thus, the park continues to protect--as it should--those impressive and irreplaceable historic earthworks at Petersburg, in accordance with its legislative obligations. But, in 1982, the pressures of ongoing development continue to impact the Flank and Defense Road areas with an accumulative number of driveways and utilities developed over the years.

Former Superintendent Elms, in retrospect, questions the Service's wisdom in conveying these roads to the city and the ability of all parties to live up to the letter of the legislation. He does not believe that the earthworks on these lands are "well protected." To make matters worse, is the moral issue--the National Park Service divested itself of lands that had been donated to the American people.<sup>16</sup>

---

15. Ltr., William Cook to Richard Stanton, Apr. 3, 1979, Pet. File, WNRC.

16. Telephone interview, Elms with Bearss, Sept. 2, 1982.

### THE FIVE FORKS AUTHORIZATION

The Dinwiddie County Civil War Centennial Commission was the first to go on record as endorsing establishment of Five Forks as a national historic site. The Park Service's initial reaction, in 1959, to including Five Forks as either a separate unit or as part of Petersburg National Military Park was negative. It was felt that "the Siege of Petersburg was sufficiently portrayed and memorialized within the two and a half square mile park without including the many outlying areas such a Five Forks."<sup>1</sup>

This attitude soon changed. The shift was brought about principally by three developments: first, Superintendent Chester L. Brooks' strong endorsement for establishing a historic site at Five Forks; second, resolutions by the Dinwiddie County and Virginia State Civil War Centennial Commissions that favored the establishment; and third, the active involvement of Congressman Watkins Abbitt in the project.<sup>2</sup>

Chester Brooks, now superintendent of Rocky Mountain National Park, recalled that shortly before he arrived at Petersburg, Franklin W. Smith of the Secretary's Advisory Board had seriously criticized the manner in which the National Park Service interpreted the July 30, 1864, fight at the Crater.

When asked through channels by Ronald F. Lee, Chief of Division of Interpretation, to comment on the issues raised by Smith, Superintendent Brooks recommended that, as the proposed tour was to begin at Battery 5 and then cross Harrison Creek, the visitor first be introduced to the Crater

---

1. Ltr., E.T. Scoyen to Watkins Abbitt, March 23, 1959, Pet. File, WNRC.

2. Ltr., Act. Reg. Dir. to Dir., Oct. 6, 1959, Pet. File, WNRC.

from a point east of the Norfolk and Western Railroad near the site of the Fourteen-Gun Battery (Fort Morton). After a stop at the Crater, the tour, to provide a more meaningful experience, should be continued to the south and west via Flank and White Oak Roads to Five Forks. Lee recognized the merit in this chronological approach to the Petersburg story, and the National Park Service endorsed the acquisition of the Five Forks area.<sup>3</sup>

Superintendent Brooks accordingly recommended that, as the first step, an historical resource study be undertaken. Edwin C. Bearss, regional research historian, was assigned the task, completing the 385-page book-length document in August, 1960; a study regarded by the Service as "meeting the high standards that Mr. Bearss had always established for his work." That it did is attested by Bearss' scholarly and detailed reply to Park Historian Tom Harrison's critique of his study.<sup>4</sup>

Brooks further initiated a boundary study that recommended about 1200 acres for the proposed site and its inclusion in the existing park.<sup>5</sup>

The owners of the two largest tracts were the Continental Can Company and Mr. and Mrs. Joseph Peter Gilliam who lived in Burnt Quarter, an old homestead that had survived both Revolutionary War raids and the battle of Five Forks. The Gilliams favored preservation of their home and farm but by whom was never made clear.

Continental Can, on the other hand, made it clear from the start

---

3. Telephone interview, Brooks with Bearss, Sept. 3, 1982.

4. Ltr., Edwin Bearss to Chester Brooks, Sept. 30, 1960, Pet. File, WNRC.

5. Ltr., Supt. to Reg. Dir., Dec. 19, 1960, Pet. File, WNRC.

that they would go along with the Gilliams in whatever they decided. Brooks felt confident there would be little difficulty in acquiring the land.<sup>6</sup>

In April 1961, Superintendent Brooks presented the Gilliams with the certificate and plaque designating Five Forks as a National Historic Landmark.<sup>7</sup> The Gilliams were intensely proud of this distinction; it was probably all they ever wanted in the way of Federal recognition and involvement.

When Superintendent Brooks transferred to Omaha in September 1961, Five Forks was as close to becoming a unit of the National Park System as it was to be during the next score of years. Five Forks was not a priority issue with William Featherstone, Brooks' successor. Instead of seeing it as a challenge, he saw the new area as a problem that would absorb valuable time and energy on the part of his staff.<sup>8</sup>

On August 24, 1962, Congress enacted Public Law 87-603, which authorized a maximum of 1,200 acres at Five Forks and no more than \$90,000 for land acquisition (See appendices for a copy of Public Law 87-603.) This meager amount for prime land--even in 1962--was the result of the Service's confidence that most of the land--if not all--would be donated. (Included in this act was changing the name Petersburg National Military Park to Petersburg National Battlefield, the result of an attempt by the Service at that time to standardize park names.)<sup>9</sup>

---

6. Ibid.

7. Ltr., Elbert Cox to Joseph Gilliam, March 13, 1961, Pet. File, WNRC.

8. Telephone interview, Brooks with Bearss, Sept. 3.

9. Report "classification of areas, adm. by NPS," March 5, 1958, Washington Office Files.

Shortly after John Willett reported as superintendent, the Gilliams invited him to Burnt Quarter for a squirrel lunch. It was on that occasion that Mr. Gilliam proposed to sell 100 acres at the Forks for one million dollars.<sup>10</sup> Willett rejected this offer and proceeded to contract with a local real estate agent for a realistic land appraisal in keeping with the \$90,000 limitation. The result came to \$88,000 for about 600 acres of unimproved land. The Gilliams in turn rejected this proposal.

When Martin Conway became superintendent in 1969, one of the first things he did was to get to know the colorful Joe Pete Gilliam. In their initial meeting which occurred in a cornfield on Gilliam's farm, the rangy, tough-looking farmer greeted the new superintendent with these words, "As I told the others, if any Park Service man ever again mentioned land to me, I'll pick up a handful of dirt and throw it in his eyes." To be sure, there was no mention of land in his presence that day. But the two soon became friends, frequently enjoying buttermilk together on the back porch of Burnt Quarter.

In May 1970, a meeting was held in the parlor of the Gilliams' home to talk about land. Besides Mr. and Mrs. Gilliam, attending were Superintendent Conway, William Wenrick of Cointinental Can, and James Rourke from the Service's Land Acquisition Office. The Gilliams appeared to be interested in the Service acquiring the property while retaining a life estate.

The following day, an offer of \$225,000 was made for 462 acres-- subject, of course, to congressional approval and including a life-estate clause for the Gilliams to live out their lives at Burnt Quarter.

---

<sup>10</sup>Ltr., Willett to Cox, Dec. 13, 1963, Pet. File, WNRC.

Mr. Gilliam responded, saying that it was nowhere near enough for his historic land and the Service was wasting his time.<sup>11</sup>

Mrs. Gilliam, who always appeared pleasant and agreeable, seemed satisfied with the offer and asked for time to talk it over with her husband. Nothing happened, however. The Service thereupon dropped plans for legislation to reduce the boundary to 600 acres and increase the authorization for land acquisition monies.

In June 1974, Superintendent Larry Hakel and the Regional Chief of Land Acquisition, Richard Swartz, arranged another meeting with the Gilliams. This time Mr. Gilliam insisted that his 2,800-acre farm remain intact and that his land was worth from \$3,000 to 5,000 an acre. No offer was made.<sup>12</sup>

Six months later, Hakel again met with Mr. Gilliam who now indicated he was willing to consider selling only part of his property. But as before, nothing happened except that Hakel proposed to the regional office some boundary changes at the 1,200-acre level.<sup>13</sup>

With the death of Joseph Gilliam in 1975, the Service continued its attempt to establish a battlefield site at Five Forks. From his frequent meetings with Mrs. Gilliam, Superintendent Elms believed the increasing the acreage to include most of the Gilliam farm would stand the best chance of acquiring the land.

On January 5, 1977, Superintendent Elms appeared before the Dinwiddie County Board of Supervisors and requested a resolution in support of a battlefield site of more than 2,000 acres. The supervisors passed a

---

11. Ltr., Rourke to Chief, Land Acquisition, May 4, 1970, Pet. File, WNRC.

12. Ltr., Richard Swartz to Reg. Dir., June 6, 1974, PNB.

13. Ltr., Larry Hakel to Reg. Dir., Dec. 12, 1974, PNB, Ltr., Hakel to Conway, Oct. 29, 1982.

resolution, but not one Elms had in mind: it not only rejected the increase but urged the area be "reduced to 400 acres or less." That did it. The issue of establishing a battlefield site at Five Forks appeared to be dead. (Mrs. Gilliam died in 1981; the estate was inherited by her nephew, Stephen Perry, who manages the 2,800-acre farm.)

Soon after taking charge of the park, Superintendent Larry Hakel met with officials of Union Camp Corporation, who had purchased timber rights to the Gilliam property. He called attention to the Confederate rifle-pits paralleling White Oak Road, and company officials agreed to see that their timbering operations would not damage these earthworks.<sup>14</sup> This oral agreement, however, failed to protect these rifle-pits. During the winter of 1982, Continental Can Co., in a clearcut logging operation, damaged sections of the Confederate earthworks on their Five Forks property. On learning of this, Superintendent Glenn Clark arranged an onsite meeting with company officials who agreed to do a better job of caring for the earthworks, including identifying them with signs.<sup>15</sup>

---

14. Ltr., Hakel to Conway, Oct. 29, 1982.

15. Glenn Clark to Martin Conway, telephone conversation, July 1982.

### REAMS STATION DONATION PROPOSAL

At the request of the Regional Office and the park, Historian Edwin C. Bearss met at the site of Reams Station on June 18, 1976, with representatives of Union Camp Corporation and the park to discuss the corporation's proposal to donate land at Reams Station to the National Park Service.<sup>1</sup> Based on his usual thorough historical analysis, Bearss recommended accepting the land because it not only contained earthworks, but it would allow better onsite interpretation of the "complicated and decisive campaign which saw the Union armies advance westward from the Jerusalem Park Road to Five Forks."<sup>2</sup>

A month later, however, Regional Director Chester Brooks ruled against accepting the donation. In a memorandum to the Petersburg Superintendent, Brooks listed five reasons for his decision:

1. Additional land would be required from Continental Can in order to have a meaningful representation of the battlefield;
2. The Federal defeat at Reams Station was only temporary as the Union army eventually achieved its objective. Therefore, the battlefield does not appear to be essential for telling the story of the westward thrust of Grant's armies.
3. Management of the area would be complicated especially as neither funds nor personnel are adequate to maintain, preserve, and interpret the remaining areas of responsibility along Flank and Defense Roads,
4. Legislation would be necessary to raise existing ceiling on acreage and funding.

---

1. Memo, Edwin C. Bearss to Superintendent, Petersburg, June 25, 1976, WASO.

2. Ibid.

5. Acquisition might well jeopardize acquisition of Five Forks in light of above limitations.<sup>3</sup>

- 
3. Memo, Regional Director to Superintendent, July 26, 1976, WASO.

### TEMPLE AVENUE EXTENSION

To relieve heavy commuter traffic between Colonial Heights and Fort Lee, the Virginia State Highway Department, in 1972, proposed a road extending from Temple Avenue in Colonial Heights across the Appomattox River to the main gate of Fort Lee. It would come within 580 feet of the park boundary at Battery 5.

Insofar as no park land was directly involved in the proposal and no federal funds were initially contemplated to be used for the project, the state did not elect to keep the park advised or to ask for comments. It was because of the good working relationship with Fort Lee that the park was kept informed over the years.

In August 1982, word was received that federal funds were to be employed in the project. Superintendent Glenn Clark thereupon initiated a meeting with federal and state officials to be held on August 24, 1982, at the park. Those present, in addition to the superintendent, were: William Fluharty, Chief Ranger; Barbarta Becker, Planner, Mid-Atlantic Region; John Humeston, Federal Highway Department; Gene Wray, Federal Environmental Coordinator; and Julia Walker, State Environmental Specialist.<sup>2</sup> Although nothing was decided, the park made its position on the road clear--the farther away from the park the better.

The road, however, is under construction to be accomplished in three

---

1. Telephone interview, Fluharty with Conway, October 26, 1982.

2. Ibid.

stages over a six year period as follows:

- a. Construction from U.S. Highway 301 (main roadway through Colonial Heights) on Temple Avenue to the Appomattox Region;
- b. construction of bridge over Appomattox River; and
- c. construction from the river to Fort Lee.

The route of the third stage has as yet to be decided. Three alternatives are under consideration: First, the original proposal that would take the road to within 500 feet of the park; second, a proposal is to build about half mile farther away; and third, to build about a mile away where the road would join the 6th Street Gate of Fort Lee.<sup>3</sup>

---

3. Ibid.

## APPOMATTOX MANOR

### A. Its Acquisition

Appomattox Manor is probably the oldest English Colonial land grant in the United States to continue in the same family. As part of an original grant by Charles I to Capt. Francis Eppes in 1635, it had been in the Eppes family ownership for 340 years.

Here from mid-June 1864 to March 29, 1865, were the Headquarters of the Armies of the United States from where Gen. U.S. Grant conducted his campaign against Gen. Robert E. Lee's Army of Northern Virginia. Here President Abraham Lincoln, for two of the last three weeks of his life, had his Executive Office. And here off the shores of Appomattox Manor was the greatest logistical operation of the war; on an average day 40 steamers, 75 sailing vessels, and 100 barges tied up along the mile-long waterfront.<sup>1</sup>

Although the historical significance of the site had been long recognized, the Chamber of Commerce of Hopewell, Virginia, must be given credit for the initial endorsement to establish Apomattox Manor as a unit of the Petersburg National Battlefield. This was brought about in large measure by the interest generated by the Civil War Centennial commemoration. But like the initial reaction to including Five Forks in the Park System three years earlier, the Service's response to accepting Appomattox Manor was a polite no thank you. In his letter to Senator Harry F. Byrd, Sr., Director Conrad L. Wirth wrote:

---

1. Harry Butowsky, Appomattox Manor-City Point, A History, 1978, PNB.

As you know, our attention has been called to many sites of historic interest in Prince George, Dinwiddie, and Chesterfield Counties, yet the Federal Government must limit its activities to those of major importance. So far as possible, we encourage state, local and private organizations to participate actively in historic preservation.<sup>2</sup>

But Director Wirth wisely reserved final judgement until the proposal could be studied further. The report by the Southeast Region strongly recommended that favorable consideration be given to Appomattox Manor for establishment as a National Historic Site.<sup>3</sup>

The Service accepted its own recommendation, but felt there was no point in seeking to acquire the manor at the time, because it was "being maintained satisfactorily from a historical viewpoint and was open to the public."<sup>4</sup>

And indeed it was. In 1961, as part of the Civil War Centennial commemoration, the manor for the first time was opened to the public. It was administered by a non-profit organization from 1963 to 1968 when it closed because of lack of funds.

The House of Representatives passed a bill in 1967 to acquire the manor but it died in the Senate. The principal stumbling block was the inability of the Eppes family trustees (trustees of the estate) to agree among themselves to sell their property. Mrs. A. P. Cutchin, an Eppes family member who lived in the manor, favored the takeover by the Service; Richard Eppes, an older brother, who had the controlling interest rights in the property, opposed the sale maintaining that the manor should stay with the family as it had during the past 340 years.

---

2. Ltr., Conrad Wirth to Harry Byrd, July 19, 1962, Pet. File, WNRC.

3. "Report on Appomattox Manor, Hopewell, Virginia," Dec. 1962, p. 2, Pet. File, WNRC.

4. Ltr., Dir. to Reg. Dir., July 3, 1963, Pet. File, WNRC.

Upon the death of Richard Eppes, his son, Richard, inherited the property. Alerted to his willingness to sell the property, Congress enacted the enabling legislation (The National Parks and Recreation Act, P.L. 95-625) that was signed into law on November 10, 1978. (A copy of the act is found in the appendices.) A year later the Park Service, for \$650,000, purchased 13.76 acres of the 20.77 acres authorized.<sup>5</sup>

B. Structural Improvements

In the four years since acquisition of Appomattox Manor was authorized, the Service has spent considerable time, money, and efforts in restoring and protecting the historical site. Lands have been purchased, non-historic structures and objects removed from the grounds; heating, electric, and alarm systems installed in the manor; fencing built along the boundaries; and utility lines relocated and placed underground. During 1981 and 1982 the Williamsport Training Center--a NPS training facility in historical restoration--undertook major stabilization work at Appomattox Manor that included adding interior support members to the manor and outbuilding and removing an endangered section of the carriage house.<sup>6</sup>

C. Archeology at Appomattox Manor, and the Sites of the Taylor and Hare Houses

During the Siege of Petersburg, Lt. Gen. Ulysses S. Grant was quartered in a stockade-type cabin built by Union soldiers on the grounds of Appomattox Manor. After the war, the cabin was moved to Fairmont Park in Philadelphia, where it remained on exhibit for well over a century.

---

5. Telephone interview, Davis with Conway, Sept. 15, 1982.

6. Ibid.

Upon the acquisition of Appomattox Manor, the Park Service proposed that Grant's Cabin be returned to its original site.<sup>7</sup> The Fairmont Park Commission approved the transfer, whereupon the Service made arrangements to dismantle and transport it from Philadelphia to its original site at Appomattox Manor. A study by the U.S. Geological Survey revealed the cabin was constructed of oak, cedar, and chestnut. It was further determined that some of the oak was cut between the 1862 and 1863 growing seasons and therefore could be the original fabric.<sup>8</sup>

In the summer of 1982 archeologists, under the direction of Regional Archeologist David Orr, excavated the site and successfully located the cabin's corner posts.<sup>9</sup>

In 1981-1982 the Historic Structures Report for Appomattox Manor and the Base Map for City Point were completed by the Denver Service Center and received at the park.

In addition to the Crater and at Appomattox Manor excavations, additional archeological projects undertaken between 1977 and 1982 included those at the Hare House and Taylor House sites.

The destruction of the Hare House early in the siege, effectually sealed the cellar, which was packed with furniture and miscellaneous household items. The archeologists made this discovery labeling it as a rich source of mid-19th century artifacts. The decision was to cover the site, mark and interpret it, and leave it for future archeologists and historians to study.<sup>10</sup>

---

7. Ltr., Robert Crawford to James Coleman, January 21, 1980, PNB.

8. Dendrochronological Study of Grant's Cabin, U.S. Geological Survey, 1980, USGS, Reston, Virginia.

The chimney ruins, formerly identified as the Taylor House site, are now thought by archeologists to be part of a detached kitchen for a larger structure built after the Civil War. The original Taylor House site was identified as being about 60 feet north of the chimney ruins.<sup>11</sup>

Information on both sites was obtained through remote sensing survey and random sampling testing (uncovering only a small section of the site as opposed to excavating the entire site).<sup>12</sup>

---

11. Ibid.

12. Ibid.

## LAND ACQUISITION

### A. Major Acts and Executive Orders

Act of July 3, 1926 (44-822), establishes park.

Act of February 25, 1929 (45-1305), authorizes transfer of Camp Lee land to park.

Executive Order of June 19, 1933 (No. 6166), transfers administration from War Department to National Park Service.

Executive Order of March 30, 1936 (No. 7329), authorizes purchase of Crater tract.

Act of June 5, 1942 (56-322), authorizes transfer of park land back to Camp Lee.

Act of September 7, 1949 (63-601), sets limits of park at 1,531 acres.

Act of July 3, 1952 (66-324), authorizes transfer of Centre Hill Mansion to Petersburg Battlefield Museum Corporation.

Act of August 24, 1962 (87-603), authorizes changing name from National Military Park to National Battlefield, and 1,200-acre site at Five Forks.

Act of April 11, 1972 (92-272), authorizes transfer of Flank and Defense Roads (257.53 acres) to the city of Petersburg.

Act of November 10, 1978 (95-625), authorizes purchase of Appomattox Manor.

### B. Major Land Transactions

<u>Year</u>	<u>Grantor</u>	<u>Consideration</u>	<u>Average/ Whereabouts</u>
1929	War Dept.	Transfer	131 acres of Battery 5 (64 acres), Fort Stedman (67 acres).
1934	War Dept.	Transfer	1,128 acres between Highway 36 and 109 to Fort Stedman.
1934	State of Maine	Transfer	5 acres in area of 1st Maine Monu- ment.

1936	Kinsey	\$25,000	123 acres of Crater area.
1939	War Dept.	Transfer	56 acres adjacent to Battery 5--present site of Visitor Center.
1943	Park Service	Transfer	739 acres east of Lee Avenue transferred back to Camp Lee.
1949	Dept. of Army	Transfer	206-acre area along Siege Road including Fort Morton, Fort Haskell.
1964	City & State	Transfer	42 acres at Fort Gregg.
1972	Park Service	Transfer	258 acres of Flank and Defense Roads.
1975	Coleman	\$170,000	18 acres including large stone house.
1975	Sykes	\$305,000	53 acres off Highway 109.
1979	Sykes	\$137,000	4 acres included in the Sykes estate.
1979	Eppes	\$650,000	14 acres Appomattox Manor.

### C. The Grand Design

The Petersburg Master Plan of 1941 proposed that an estimated 500 acres be acquired between the Crater area and Fort Davis, an area that would have included the sites of Fort Meikle, Fort Rice, and Fort Sedgwick, and all the land that now comprises Walnut Hill Mall and Walnut Hill Plaza. Flank and Defense Roads would have continued to Five Forks and included sizeable acquisitions at Hatchers Run and Fort Gregg.

The plan also envisioned park land on both sides of Highway 36 as far as River Road--more than half a mile farther west than the present boundary.

D. Recent Acquisitions

To protect the Crater and especially the visual impact upon leaving the park, Superintendent Martin Conway recommended that the land across Crater Road at the park exit be acquired. First, a small lot was acquired in 1970; two others were acquired in 1977 and another (Crater View Baptist Church) in 1978.

But the significant increase in recent land acquisitions was under Superintendent Wallace Elms. With the exception of a small inholding, he acquired all the inholdings along Highway 109, including about 245 acres in 12 land transactions at a cost of more than \$1,078,000. This was in addition to the \$650,000 for Appomattox Manor.

### RELATIONS WITH FORT LEE

Petersburg National Battlefield could be called a child of the Fort Lee Quartermaster Center. The park began as a viable unit in 1929, when 131 acres were transferred from Camp Lee (name changed to Fort Lee in 1950 on its becoming a permanent military installation). Today, more than 1,046 acres of the 1,500-acre park were once part of Fort Lee.

Relations have generally been friendly and cooperative between the two Federal agencies, notwithstanding the brief period after World War II when the Army insisted on reclaiming part of the park. This is what happened:

During the war, the Service permitted Camp Lee to use the park for training and encampments, restricting only the use of heavy equipment during training exercises. But, with the end of the war, the Army appeared reluctant to give up about 300 acres of park land it had once owned adjacent to its camp. Sensing this, Secretary of the Interior Julius Krug wrote the Secretary of War:

I am very anxious to have this area returned to a peacetime basis and would appreciate the relinquishment of these permits by your Department. In the event that you require continued use of the water main, reservoir and pumping station, I shall be glad to issue a permit covering these items. I would expect, however, that the permit would authorize the National Park Service to connect into the water main for service to the park utility area and residences.<sup>1</sup>

A week later, the Chief of Engineers, Lt. Gen. R. A. Wheeler, who may not have been aware of the above letter, wrote Director Newton Drury for permission to construct a golf course on this land. Drury rejected the request, stating that the use of park land for such a purpose would be contrary to the purpose for which the area was established.<sup>2</sup>

---

1. Ltr., Sec. of Int. to Sec. of War, April 13, 1947, Pet. File, WNRC.

The Army, not used to accepting no for an answer, next arranged a meeting with Secretary Krug and requested the outright transfer of the 294 acres back to military jurisdiction. The Secretary responded that he was unwilling to agree to the transfer of any park land at Petersburg.<sup>3</sup>

Upon the appointment of the new Secretary of the Interior, Oscar Chapman, the Army continued its effort, this time bringing up its heavy artillery. In January 1950, from the Office of the Secretary of Defense, came another request to the Secretary of the Interior for the transfer of this prime battlefield land.

The Secretary replied that he was eager to be neighborly and desired to cooperate with the military in every way possible, but he, too, had no intentions of transferring the land. He continued by taking the offensive:

From a casual review of the map that you sent, there is apparently a considerable amount of open land within the Camp Lee Reservation. The space available, both on the north side of Virginia State No. 36 and to the east of the main building development, and even a small amount to the southwest of the Camp seems to be comparatively open, with good terrain that could be used for sports, outdoor class activities, etc. As to the permanent water-pumping station reservoir within the park area, you need not fear that anything would be done to disturb that plant without full concurrence of the Army.<sup>4</sup>

The reply by the Defense Department--although it began with "My dear Oscar"--was abrasive, telling the Secretary that he did not understand the problem including the historic significance of the land he administered. The only justification the Defense Department gave for wanting the land was "Camp Lee requires the entire area in order to fulfill its mission." It was

---

2. Ltr., Newton Drury to R. A. Wheeler (Lt. Gen.), May 5, 1947, Pet. File, WNRC.

3. Ltr., Dir. to Reg. Dir., Oct. 18, 1949, Pet. File, WNRC.

4. Ltr., Oscar Chapman to Lewis Renfrow, March 4, 1950, Pet. File, WNRC.

obvious that the military had little understanding of the Park Service and failed to comprehend that it too had its mission. The letter continued:

Inasmuch as any transfer of land from the Department of the Interior to the Department of the Army would require action by the Congress, I am sure the Department of the Army would have no objection to including in the Act a proviso that there would be no permanent construction, or no temporary buildings, except in a national emergency, erected on land transferred from the Department of the Interior to the Department of the Army west of Lee Avenue and Avenue A, without concurrence of yourself.

It would be appreciated if you would again take a look at this and see if something could be worked out.<sup>5</sup>

This time, Secretary Chapman spelled it out clearly and unequivocally:

There comes a point beyond which we cannot go in whittling away the park and still have left enough of an exhibit worthy to be called Petersburg National Military Park. In all sincerity, I consider that point to be set forth in my letter of March 4, beyond which I am not prepared to make further concession. It is my understanding that Representative Abbitt is inclined to a similar view.

I suggest that the needs and developments at Camp Lee be appraised on the basis of preserving the park from further encroachment. For some time we have been concerned because the Camp Lee development seemed to be gravitating toward the park. It is our feeling that there is other useable space within the Camp or adjacent to it that could be used for expansion. Moreover, the present permit to the Department of the Army authorizes use of certain park lands for recreational and other purposes.<sup>6</sup>

That did it. Although the Army since then has been allowed use of part of that park area for training and recreational purposes under a special-use permit, it never again made an attempt to acquire this acreage through transfer. In 1970, Superintendent Conway was asked by the commanding general to rule on the possibility of constructing a helicopter landing pad there. Conway rejected the request, and the Army took it no further.

---

5. Ltr., Renfrow to Chapman, March 27, 1950, Pet. File, WNRC.

6. Ltr., Chapman to Renfrow, April 12, 1950, Pet. File, WNRC.

But the park has cooperated with Fort Lee in other ways including:

1. A long-term loan of the two 32-pounder howitzers that grace the post's main gate, and a 6-pounder in front of the commanding general's headquarters.
2. Special artillery firing and drill demonstrations with the 6-horse artillery unit on the parade ground of Fort Lee; and
3. Conducted battlefield tours requested for special guests of Fort Lee.<sup>7</sup>

In 1969, an evening reception, hosted by park employees and their families, was held to show off the new visitor center to the retired commanding officer, Maj. Gen. Victor McLaughlin, and his replacement, Maj. Gen. John McLaughlin. Staying more than two hours longer than they planned, both men seemed impressed especially with the map presentation and the library--where they told war stories to the Superintendent.

Later, both generals at different times were treated to a typical Civil War soldier's meal consisting of beans, hardtack, stew, and coffee at the soldier's hut.

Fort Lee reciprocated by:

1. Monitoring the fire and intrusion alarm systems in the visitor center, 24 hours a day since 1973;
2. Arranging the transportation of a 13-inch seacoast mortar from Fort Sumter; and
3. Lifting two huge 32-pounder coast artillery guns that were planted upright in the center of Poplar Grove National Cemetery, removing them to park storage from where they were later transferred to Fort Donelson.<sup>8</sup>

In the mid-1970s Superintendent Hakel cooperated with the post commander to see that personnel arriving at Fort Lee were informed of the role of the battlefield, its importance, and their expected behavior when visiting

---

7. Recollection of Martin Conway, April 1982.

8. Ibid., Feb. 1982.

the area. On several occasions the park staff worked with the post engineer on road maintenance, pumping station improvements, etc. Several changes were made to the Fort Lee Special Use Permit. Use of the battlefield as a helicopter landing zone was terminated. Fort Lee also agreed to alter helicopter flight patterns. The park continued to provide living history programs at post ceremonies.<sup>9</sup>

Then there came a dramatic change in relations with Fort Lee. New legislation enacted by Congress precluded the post commander from employing personnel (military police) to assist with law enforcement on park lands. This situation resulted in a great increase in the work load of the ranger division.<sup>10</sup>

---

9. Ltr., Hakel to Conway, Oct. 29, 1982.

10. Telephone interview, Elms with Bearss, Sept. 2, 1982.

## LAW ENFORCEMENT

During the early years of the park, when visitation was small and the park relatively isolated, there was little need for a full-time ranger. No housing developments existed along park boundaries and Flank and Defense Roads were still to be built.

In 1942, Superintendent Oscar Northington appointed Melvin Proffitt as the park's first full-time ranger (Allen Burtness had served as ranger for a few months in 1941-42), even though his background and interests were maintenance. Furthermore, he had no professional law-enforcement training nor did he receive any during his 25 years as a park ranger.

Until 1968, historians assigned to Petersburg--as with many smaller parks--were expected to perform a wide variety of duties including manning the information desk, selling historical publications, patrolling the roads, closing and opening entrance gates, and fighting fires. But with the new developments brought about by Mission 66 and the surge in visitation that resulted, there was a corresponding increase in vandalism, speeding violations, and brush fires. There was now need for ranger division at Petersburg.

By 1968, the ranger force had increased to two full-time rangers and five seasonals. In addition, a surplus navy truck was acquired and fitted out as a fire suppression vehicle.<sup>1</sup>

About this time, an alleged gang-rape behind Fort Haskell and a number of indecent exposure incidences in the Fort Stedman area resulted in the introduction of horse-mounted ranger patrols. In introducing horses to

---

1. Conway recollections, March 1982.

the park, Superintendent Conway felt that: (a) it was impossible to adequately patrol the park in a vehicle; (b) rangers on horseback could see farther and could go anywhere; and (c) just knowing that rangers were patrolling on horseback was a deterrent to crime.<sup>2</sup>

Upon completion of the visitor center in 1968 and before anything had been moved in, youngsters from the Fort Lee housing development broke in and damaged part of the public-address system. About a year later, a mentally deranged soldier from Fort Lee stole a rifle from a exhibit case in "broad daylight." Both cases were investigated and solved by the Federal Bureau of Investigation (F.B.I.). The rifle was returned to the park from New Jersey where it was recovered.<sup>3</sup>

It was after the park's payroll was stolen that Superintendent Conway installed a sonic and heat sensing system in the visitor center. When activated, lights throughout the building would go on, an alarm bell would ring, and an automatic dialing system would relay a recorded message to the homes of the superintendent and ranger.

Superintendent Larry Hakel improved this by arranging with the Fort Lee Military Police to monitor the system 24 hours a day. Further improvements were made by the park's first chief ranger, Bill Fluharty, who in 1975 replaced the sonic and heat system with a more efficient infra-red system.<sup>4</sup>

Although there have been a number of attempted break-ins, the visitor

---

2. Ibid.

3. Ibid.

4. Personnel interview, Conway with Fluharty, Feb. 1982, ltr., Hakel to Conway, Oct. 28, 1982.

center has remained secure since the first system was introduced in 1970.

Relations between the ranger force and local law enforcement agencies--including Petersburg City Police, the F.B.I., County Sheriff's Department, and the military police--have always been cooperative and professional and continue that way.<sup>5</sup>

Each year (beginning in the late 1960s), the park experiences its heaviest concentration of visitors during spring weekends. By 1974, the congestion had become a serious problem, bringing with it increased consumption of liquor and beer, littering, streakers, and bicycles.<sup>6</sup>

In commenting on this in July 1982, Chief Ranger Bill Fluharty wrote:

The visitation here is somewhat peculiar to what most parks in Virginia experience. We have the highest concentration of visitors during spring weekends. This concentration has been so heavy that we were forced to close the entrance gates on two occasions during the past two years because we could not accommodate any more vehicles. The travel time was two and one-half to three hours to travel the four miles through the park. This happened on March 18, 1979 and March 16, 1980. On April 9 and April 16, 1978, we were able to borrow two rangers from Shenandoah National Park to assist in crowd control. When visitation is this concentrated, emergency vehicles are not able to move. The only transportation able to operate during these periods are the horse, bicycle and the motorcycle. We have been fortunate that nobody has been seriously injured during these times and needed help.

We should note that the spring of 1982 was experienced without any of these conditions and that enforced parking time limits, ranger presence and enforcement of regulations may have helped to abate this problem for now. We will have to wait to see what the trend may be.<sup>7</sup>

To compound the law enforcement problem, Petersburg National Battlefield is a patchwork of three law enforcement jurisdictions: exclusive, proprietary,

---

5. Ibid.

6. Ltr., Hakel to Conway, Oct. 29, 1982.

7. Ltr., Fluharty to Conway, July 13, 1982, PNB.

and concurrent. Areas of exclusive jurisdiction belonged formerly to Fort Lee, whereupon after being transferred to the park they continued uninterrupted within that jurisdiction. Not all the areas transferred from the military were under exclusive jurisdiction. Most, however, were.

In areas of proprietary jurisdiction, the State of Virginia simply refused to cede any of its law enforcement authority to the federal government, while agreeing to equally share in its responsibility on orders of concurrent jurisdiction.<sup>8</sup>

---

8. Conway, Recollections, Sept. 10, 1982.

## HICKORY HILL ROAD HOUSING PROJECT

### A. Background of Housing Units Adjacent to the Park

After World War II, an extensive housing development, consisting principally of small 2-bedroom houses, was constructed between Highway 36 and along the park's northern boundary for about half a mile. Called Lakemont, it includes about 300 houses.

In 1952, after becoming a permanent military installation, Fort Lee built next to the Battery 5 area a 310-unit housing complex for its enlisted personnel and their families. A U.S. Department of Housing and Urban Development (HUD)--sponsored housing project for low income families named Pin Oaks was developed in 1972 near Lakemont. The Pin Oaks development was unsuccessfully fought by the Lakemont Citizens Association in the courts. Among those named as defendants in the suit was the National Park Service. The Park Service cooperated with HUD by exchanging a narrow appendage of park land that was needed for the site for land the Service wanted at Fredericksburg.

Several years later, Croatan (also known as Petersburg East Development), a housing development of 168 units, was built along park boundaries east of Lakemont.

Larry Hakel, superintendent from 1972 to 1975, recalls that Pin Oaks was under construction when he reported. Immediately after occupancy, problems surfaced with the residents. Hakel asked the Housing Authority to build a fence while seeking to involve the Pin Oaks community. He was elected president of the Robert E. Lee Elementary School PTA and

tried to institute recreational programs to be conducted by the city and school. None of these plans seemed to quite succeed.

When Croatan (Petersburg East) was platted, Superintendent Hakel contacted HUD, as their local officials had made no effort to comply with 106 procedures. After a series of acrimonious meetings, the HUD people agreed to limit the housing to two-story, erect a fence, and to employ a natural finish for the houses' exteriors.<sup>1</sup>

#### B. Hickory Hill Project

In March 1978, the City of Petersburg and the Petersburg Redevelopment and Housing Authority entered into an agreement to provide 101 public housing units from a 3.9-million-dollar grant awarded by HUD.

The housing authority's first two choices--both some distance from Petersburg National Battlefield--were rejected by the City Council. The third choice, a 11.5-acre site on Hickory Hill Road across from the Petersburg Battlefield, was approved by a 4 to 3 vote, in August 1979.

At the time the Hickory Hill Road site was under consideration by the authority, Miss Dama Elizabeth Rice, a local real estate agent who lives on Hickory Hill Road, organized the "Concerned Citizens Group" to oppose the Hickory Hill site. Their first order of business, after the site was approved by the City Council, was to request that the National Park Service join them in opposition.

The response by the Service was positive and immediate. Two letters--one in July, the other in September, 1979--from the Mid-Atlantic Regional

---

<sup>1</sup>. Ltr., Hakel to Conway, Oct. 29, 1982.

Office to HUD's area office in Richmond expressed the Service's interest in the proposal and requested the opportunity to review the results of HUD's environmental analysis. The letters further stated that in the Service's opinion, the proposed site had the potential to adversely impact park resources.<sup>2</sup>

In reply, the compliance officer for HUD proposed to the Petersburg Superintendent that a 6-to-8 foot-high-fence be built along the boundary of the project to control entry into the park. Superintendent Elms reiterated his concern about the adverse impact on the park that another high density housing project would have, adding that the battlefield was currently being subjected to destructive recreational use, vandalism, and damage, the result of existing high density housing residents.<sup>3</sup>

HUD had issued an 11-page Special Environmental Clearance Worksheet that the Service regarded as inadequate.<sup>4</sup>

On June 9, 1980, the Advisory Council on Historic Preservation, upon consultation with the Park Service, held a public meeting in Petersburg. Before the meeting, the park staff conducted Council staff members on a tour of the park to show examples of vandalism and litter in areas adjacent to existing housing developments. The Service's position at the meeting was for selection of an alternative site away from the park.

Four months later, the Advisory Council and HUD--without any input or consultation from the Park Service--made known that they had between

---

2. Ltrs., Nathan Golub to Margaret White, July 25, 1979, Sept. 25, 1979, Sept. 7, 1979, Washington Office Files.

3. Briefing for the Secretary, November 1980, WOF.

4. Ltr., Nelson to White, Feb. 21, 1980, WOF.

them worked out a Memorandum of Agreement that they believed would solve the problem. In fact, it made matters worse.

Except for a landscaping plan designed to minimize the visual impact to the park, the document consisted of generalizations ignoring the Service's primary concern--the potentially adverse effects such a project would have on the park. The Service was requested to concur in the agreement. There was no way. In a strongly worded letter to the Council, Mid-Atlantic Regional Director James Coleman, Jr. (son of a former superintendent who was born at Petersburg) not only rejected the agreement, but requested that an environmental impact statement be prepared by HUD. He further requested that, in any revised agreements, the Park Service be made a full signatory rather than a concurring party. The document was returned unsigned.<sup>5</sup>

Meanwhile, the housing authority was moving ahead on all fronts, confident that the housing units would be located at the Hickory Hill site. An attorney was employed, land was acquired, architectural and construction drawings were developed, and contractors were requested to submit bids on the project.

But no one, it seemed, had yet comprehended the tenacity and determination of Dama Rice, who kept up a bewildering barrage of correspondence to anyone--from the President of the United States on down--who she felt might rally to her support. In addition to the Park Service, she marshaled to her cause conservation and preservation organizations, including National Park and Conservation Association, Civil War Round Table Associates, and the Council on America's Military Past. The pressure on HUD to take

---

5. Ltr., James Coleman to Robert Garvey, Nov. 13, 1980, WOF.

another look at Hickory Hill became intense.

On August 19, 1981, representatives of the Park Service and HUD met to discuss the problem. HUD finally agreed to put a hold on the project and to study alternative sites--measures the Park Service wanted.<sup>6</sup>

Upon being told to suspend further development of the project, the overly optimistic housing authority reacted vigorously still refusing to believe they could be denied the Hickory Hill site.

In a six-page appeal to the Secretary of HUD, the authority pointed out the problems cancellation of the project would present, stating (a) that the project had advanced too far to be stopped; (b) that about \$440,000 had been obligated for property acquisition and attorney and architectural fees; (c) that lawsuits could be anticipated; and (d) that the authority was under contractual obligation to produce 101 units of public housing at the Hickory Hill Road site.<sup>7</sup>

The authority also lashed out and challenged the Park Service. In a letter to Interior Secretary James G. Watt, it wrote:

The Authority has challenged the National Park Service to come forward with specific proof that vandals, criminals and other less desirable persons who have committed wrongs against the Battlefield, are residents of public housing under the control of this Authority. We have yet to receive observable evidence, in the form of case reports, notices of violation, or some record of arrest or of trail, which establish that residents of public housing have been involved in criminal activities in the Battlefield.

Moreover, before this Hickory Hill site was proposed to the Council of the City of Petersburg, (the third presented to the Council, of 35 sites studied), this Authority went to the then Superintendent of the Petersburg Battlefield Park, and advised him of the proposal to put public housing on the site. Superintendent Elms had no objection to the proposed development.

---

6. Ltr., Larry Arnett to Florence Haines, Oct. 9, 1981, WOF.

7. Ltr., Florence Haines to Samuel Pierce, Sept. 11, 1981, WOF.

This issue of "people encroachment" is a straw. The Park Service purchased properties on the north side of Hickory Hill Road, just a few years ago. Certainly this purchase must have been the result of a study by the National Park Service by which it satisfied itself that the purchases would provide an adequate buffer for the Battlefield. It could have purchased the very properties on the south side of Hickory Hill Road that this Authority did, if "people encroachment" is a legitimate concern.

When is a boundary a boundary? How far can a National Park reasonably extend itself into the surrounding community? How can a National Park reasonably, and justifiably, dictate to landowners, whose land is not on Park property, the uses to which their land may be subjected?

Certainly, we are keenly aware of the historical impact on the City that the Petersburg National Battlefield has. It is monument to the War Between the States, and it brings tourists to the City. But the Battlefield also attracts young persons with their vans, frisbees, beer, loud radios and tape music, pot, debris, and other undesirable characteristics that have no relationship to public housing in the City, whatsoever.<sup>8</sup>

But the forces opposed to the project were steadily building. In a September, 1981, meeting, the Petersburg City Council reversed its support of the housing authority and called for the remaining funds to be used for rehabilitation of existing housing in the city. The authority rejected the proposal as being unrealistic and too costly.

On October 23, at a special meeting called by the housing authority, the Park Service formally requested the authority to "give careful consideration to other alternatives and select one that would be least threatening to Petersburg National Battlefield."

While conceding that the Park Service has "some perhaps genuine concerns about people encroachment at the battlefield," the authority said the proposed project includes "natural buffers and fencing to keep trespassers from walking over the Park."<sup>9</sup>

---

8. Ltr., Haines to Watt, Aug. 28, 1981, WOF.

9. The Progress-Index, Petersburg, Virginia, Nov. 6, 1981.

On December 7, 1981, after a two-hour meeting between the City Council and the housing authority, a compromise was reached. It called for 25 to 30 single-family units to be built on the Hickory Hill site, 50 units in the Gillfield section of the city, and about 30 scattered housing units to be acquired and rehabilitated.

C. Comment

It is questionable whether the Park Service would have become involved in the Hickory Hill dispute--indeed if a dispute would have developed--if not for the tenacity of Dama Rice. The Service got caught up in a dispute that developed into a force of its own.

The biggest mistake was made when the Advisory Council and HUD, on their own and in good faith, attempted to solve the problem without getting the Service involved. But, even after the weak and vague Memorandum of Agreement was brought forth, the Service was willing to work with the two agencies on a revised agreement in which it would participate as an equal. But no--the Advisory Council threw up its hands and backed off. HUD continued with the project without adequate environmental analysis that the Service insisted was needed.

It was a difficult position. The NPS choice was to tacitly back Ms. Rice and try for an alternative site.

D. Current Threats to the Park

Although preservationists had won the Hickory Hill fight, they cannot relax their vigilance. Other threats to the park's resources from outside the

boundaries include:

(a) Less than a mile from Battery 5 is a surface mining operation (Friend Sand and Gravel Co.) that ever so slowly came nearer the park leaving in its wake a torn and marred landscape. Up to now there has been no apparent effort by the mining company to restore the land.<sup>10</sup>

(b) South of the mining operation and close to the park, a refuse recycling plant has been proposed on land that is presently an attractive farm and before that part of the Confederate defense line between Battery 4 and the Appomattox River.

(c) To relieve traffic between Fort Lee and Colonial Heights, the Virginia highway department plans to build an expressway near the park's northern boundary close to Battery 5 and the "Dictator."<sup>11</sup>

---

10. Conway, Recollections, Feb. 1982.

11. Telephone interview, Camper with Conway, Sept. 21, 1982.

## EARTHWORK PRESERVATION

The first major project of caring for the earthworks at Petersburg occurred during the early years of the Great Depression. In 1933, a Public Works Project provided \$97,110 for the clearing and erosion control of the park's earthworks.

### A. Proposed Reconstructions

A proposal for park development under Mission 66 was a detailed reconstruction of a fort. Fort Stedman was originally considered, but planners later focused on Fort Haskell. This, too, was later changed to Fort Morton, the reason being that since no visible evidence remained of that fortification, no original fabric would be disturbed in a reconstruction project.<sup>1</sup> This proposal was vetoed by the Washington Office of Archeology and Historic Preservation. Historian Roy E. Appleman justly pointed out that if the park were giving away the fortifications of Flank and Defense Roads, funds should not be made available to reconstruct Fort Morton.<sup>2</sup>

In 1970, Superintendent Conway proposed reconstruction of earthworks between Battery 5 and Battery 6 with a possibility of continuing the line to Fort Stedman. This died because of the Service's increasingly dim view of reconstruction projects involving cultural resources.

### B. Metal Detecting

In the years after World War II, there developed a real concern for protecting Civil War earthworks and the tons of spent munitions and

---

1. Ltr., Reg. Dir. to Supt., Sept. 9, 1964, WNRC.

2. Personal interview, Bearss with Conway, July 5, 1982.

historic artifacts that lay beneath. The enemy was an army of souvenir hunters and collectors equipped with shovels and battery-powered metal detectors (modeled after the mine detectors of World War II).

These devices became increasingly sophisticated in the 1960s and 1970s.

Because of their extensive systems of earthworks, Petersburg, Fredricksburg, and Richmond were among the prime targeted areas. Thousands of holes were gouged in earthworks and fortifications exposing them to increased destruction through erosion. By 1973, this type of vandalism showed a marked increase.

To combat these invaders, Superintendent Larry Hakel came up with the novel idea of strewing thousands of quarter-size metallic slugs on earthworks and throughout the park where metal detecting was rampant. This approach to discourage metal detecting was quickly adopted by Superintendent Dixon Freeland of Fredricksburg.

But not everyone in the Service applauded Hakel's initiative. Assistant Director of Park Historic Preservation, Robert Utley wrote from the Washington office:

While we commend the zeal and good intentions of the Petersburg staff, we believe that this solution should have been discussed with appropriate qualified professional personnel before it was implemented. Although the action taken might frustrate and discourage relic hunters and hopefully will reduce damage to earthworks, it will also handicap any future authorized archeological investigations attempted in the areas strewn with slugs. In addition, such official litter affects the park's integrity as much as comparable litter dropped by visitors or created by adverse development.

We believe that solutions for the many serious problems affecting the historical resources of our parks should be implemented only after consultation with appropriate professionals on regional and other staffs.<sup>3</sup>

---

3. Ltr., Assoc. Dir. to Reg. Dir., MAR, Nov. 29, 1973, WOF; Ltr., Hakel to Conway, Oct. 29, 1982.

Regional Director Chester Brooks disagreed and replied that if the measure received approval by the Virginia Landmarks Commission and the Advisory Council on Historic Preservation (both of whom did approve), he in turn, would likewise approve the novel approach of scattering slugs in sensitive localities of Civil War areas of his regions. <sup>4</sup>

#### 1974 Earthworks Preservation Conference

But the slugs never proved entirely satisfactory in controlling illegal metal detecting. They may have discouraged vandals in some cases, but they were worthless against increasingly sophisticated metal detectors equipped with the capacity to override phony slugs for the real thing. Out of the ensuing debate emerged an earthworks preservation conference initially suggested by Superintendent Hakel held at Petersburg on July 30-31, 1974. It attracted 43 officials from throughout the Service.

Seventeen recommendations were agreed upon, among them:

1. The removal of large trees on the earthworks should receive careful consideration. Trees do compete for soil nutrients and moisture and tend to deteriorate the original manmade earth forms. This competition makes it difficult or impossible to establish and maintain a protective vegetative cover.
2. Improve existing soil or add topsoil to support effective plant growth on earthworks.
3. Select appropriate plants depending on the situation.
4. The least expensive and among the best plants from a maintenance standpoint is grass.
5. To support visitor impact consider the use of stabilized turf walks constructed on top or bottom of embankments.<sup>5</sup>

---

<sup>4</sup>. Ltr., Reg. Dir. to Assoc, Dir., May 28, 1974, WOF.

<sup>5</sup>. "Earthwork Preservation Conference Report," Dec. 27, 1974, WNRC.

In the weeks following the conference, Superintendent Hakel had 1,507 pounds of slugs broadcast over the parapets and ditches of Forts Welch, Urmston, Fisher, and Conahey, because these outlying works were most susceptible to illegal metal detecting.<sup>6</sup>

#### Earthwork Stabilization and Vista Clearing

One of the more novel approaches to discouraging walking on earthworks had occurred in 1969. Superintendent Conway had placed a sign by a heavily trod section of Battery 5 that read "Beware of Snakes on Earthworks. Stay on path." The sign served, it seemed, only to have the reverse effect, perhaps posing a challenge to many. Rather than decreasing earthworks strolling, it appeared to increase it. The sign was removed.

Superintendent Wally Elms, in 1975, began measures to stabilize Fort Stedman and the Crater, both heavily visited areas of the park. To allow groundcover to take hold and thus stabilize the eroding earthworks, Fort Stedman was enclosed by a fence for more than a year.

The Crater project was more complex and included the removal of five large trees; an archeological excavation to determine the site of the tunnel within the Crater and the contour of the original explosion; installation of a drinking fountain for the public and two hydrants for watering stabilized planting; and construction of fencing to discourage foot-traffic into the Crater.

In 1978, the Youth Conservation Corps (YCC) cleared a 440-by 125-foot wooded area between the site of Fort Morton and the Crater. The result was to greatly enhance the interpretive story of the Crater and to more realistically portray the battlefield as it appeared during the siege.

---

6. Ltr., Hakel to Conway, Oct. 29, 1982.

For four summers--1977-1980--the park enjoyed the benefits of YCC, which each year averaged 22 youths supervised by five staff members. In addition to the Crater vista clearing, YCC work projects including removing brush from the earthworks at Fort Wadsworth and on the grounds of Appomattox Manor, and constructing footbridges on trails throughout the park. Additionally, splitrail fencing was erected in the Crater area.<sup>7</sup>

---

<sup>7</sup>. Interview, Lucia Camper with Martin Conway, July 20, 1982.

## THE "DICTATOR"

Next only to the Crater, the "Dictator" has proven a source of continuous fascination since its arrival on the Petersburg front early in the siege. Because of this interest, there have been periodic attempts since the park was established to acquire a 13-inch seacoast mortar for battlefield display.

Lacking the real thing, Superintendent J. Walter Coleman, in 1935, initiated an imaginative plan to duplicate the huge weapon out of concrete.<sup>1</sup> Under the supervision of Park Historian Manning Voorhis--who used photographs as the basis for design--and employing the CCC labor force assigned to the park, a facsimile of the weapon was fashioned and placed on the site where the original stood near Battery 5. And there it stayed for 33 years to become the unofficial symbol of the battlefield and a marvelous interpretive device.

In 1969, Superintendent Martin Conway, on learning that Fort Sumter National Monument had two 13-inch seacoast mortars--weapons that had no historic significance to the fort--arranged with the superintendent of Fort Sumter, Paul Swartz, to exchange one of the mortars for a 18-pounder bronze siege gun. (Although the siege gun had no historic significance to either the fort or to Petersburg, it nevertheless was an interesting gun having been captured in March 1847 at Veracruz. It was engraved with the Mexican eagle.)

Facing the problem of transporting the heavy weapons, Conway called on neighboring Fort Lee with its assortment of heavy-duty lifts and trucks.

---

1. Ltr., Coleman to Director, Oct. 31, 1935, WNRC.

Maj. Gen. Victor McLaughlin, commanding general of Fort Lee, responded by dispatching a flatbed truck and arranging a helicopter to lift the 9-ton weapon from the fort onto a barge.

Hurricane Camille delayed the tricky shipping maneuver for some time: unsafe water conditions in Charleston Harbor prevented the mortar from being barged across the bay to the waiting Fort Lee truck. When the 13-inch mortar arrived in Petersburg on August 28, 1969, it was greeted at the city's Information Center by city dignitaries and officials from Fort Lee and the Park Service. Shortly thereafter, it was taken to the park to replace the concrete model which, although having served long and well, came to an ignominious end when it was demolished and hauled away by Fort Lee.

Some 40 years after the Civil War, veterans of the 1st Connecticut Heavy Artillery--the unit that manned the weapon at Petersburg--obtained from Fort Monroe a 13-inch seacoast mortar and claimed it as the original "Dictator." It was taken to Connecticut and afforded a place of honor on the grounds of the State Capitol in Hartford where it is today. As a result of the publicity generated by Superintendent Coleman's concrete model, the Hartford mortar's claim of being the original "Dictator" was questioned. Photographs of the two pointed out the differences and Coleman agreed that the weapon at Hartford might not be the Petersburg "Dictator." But he went on to say:

It occurred to us that the veterans of the First Connecticut Heavy Artillery may have been given a mortar of the same caliber but a somewhat different make than the one which they actually used, but it is hard to believe that the original artillerists were not aware of the difference.

With regard to the mortar at Holyoke, the marking on the face of the barrel would presumably indicate that the gun came from the Fort

Pitt Arsenal. It is very difficult to trace the history of any particular gun through the War, so that there is scarcely any way of telling whether or not it was used at Petersburg. At present, we do not have sufficient appropriation to meet the cost of transporting this gun [Holyoke] and mounting it at Petersburg. We would like very much to have such a mortar, and the time, we hope, will come when we will be in a position to secure one.

With regard to the reproduction which we made in concrete, we proceeded principally from photographs from the original gun used at Petersburg. We also have pictures of the Hartford gun, which vaguely indicated a ring around the outside of the barrel near the muzzle, but which were not taken from the proper angle to inform us concerning the lifting ring. The photographs which you sent show these features quite distinctly, and we agree with you that either there were two such mortars used, or that they do not have the right one at Hartford.<sup>2</sup>

More recently, the authenticity of the Hartford "Dictator" was challenged by a newspaper in Oneonta, New York, that claimed that the 13-inch seacoast mortar in front of its state armory was more like the Petersburg mortar than the one at Hartford. The newspaper pointed out that the original had two steps in front while the one at Hartford had but one; also that the original had an eye welded to the top of the barrel which the Hartford gun lacked.

The whereabouts of the original "Dictator" may never be known. As Superintendent Coleman pointed out, "it is very difficult to trace the whereabouts of any gun during the war."

For all we now know, the original could have long ago vanished from the scene, relegated to scrap, melted down and recycled. Or it could be any of the dozen or so 13-inch mortars surviving in towns and cities across the nation, including the one at Hartford which could have been modified between the time it was at Petersburg and transported to Hartford.

But more intriguing, it could well be the one with the rounded projectile welded at its mouth that stands today at the site where the "Dictator" roared on the Petersburg front 118 years ago.

In the years since the 13-inch mortar was positioned, several site improvement and maintenance projects were undertaken. In the spring of 1973 steps were positioned to facilitate access to the site from Battery 5. Soon thereafter, it was seen that one side of the mortar's bed had rusted to a point where it posed a threat to the visitors. Plans were secured by Superintendent Hakel from National Archives and the bed repaired.<sup>3</sup>

---

3. Ltr., Hakel to Conway, Oct. 29, 1982.

### POPLAR GROVE NATIONAL CEMETERY

At the time Larry Hakel reported as superintendent, he found certain cemetery structures in need of attention--paint was decaying and falling out of joints in the brick wall, headstones were sinking, and the residence was in need of repair. Hakel secured limited funds and undertook several maintenance projects aimed at improving the situation.<sup>1</sup>

Because of other priorities, it was fiscal year 1979 before the Mid-Atlantic Region saw fit to allot \$31,500 for renovation and stabilization of the cemetery lodge. The project was contracted to Anderson Construction Company of Richmond, and the improvements included repaving walkways; installing a steel beam to provide additional support to the second floor; installation of new water and electrical systems throughout the house; renovating kitchen, including new flooring, ceiling, lighting, cabinets, and sink; and painting all first floor rooms.<sup>2</sup>

---

1. Ltr., Hakel to Conway, Oct. 29, 1982.

2. Telephone interview, Camper with Conway, Oct. 5, 1982.

APPENDIX A

Park Visitation--1967-1981

1967	-	293,252
1968	-	231,616
1969	-	176,299
1970	-	284,255
1971	-	345,525
1972	-	241,679
1973	-	432,074
1974	-	417,781
1975	-	467,510
1976	-	517,280
1977	-	616,432
1978	-	665,942
1979	-	577,283
1980	-	545,765
1981	-	536,003

## APPENDIX B

### Park Commissioners and Superintendents

#### Under the War Department

<u>Name</u>	<u>Title</u>	<u>Period of Service</u>
Capt. Carter R. Bishop (Confederate Veteran)	Commissioner	Feb. 1928 - Aug. 1941
Capt. Henry N. Comey (Union Veteran)	Commissioner	Jan. 1928 - April 1932
Lt. Col. Henry C. Jewett, U. S. Army	Commissioner (Secretary)	Jan. 1928 - Oct. 1929
Lt. Col. James Blyth, U. S. Army	Commissioner (Secretary)	Oct. 1929 - Jan. 1930
Col. Tenny Ross, U. S. Army	Commissioner (Secretary)	Jan. 1930 - June 1930
Maj. Arthur E. Wilbourn, U. S. Army	Commissioner (Secretary)	June 1930 - Aug. 1933
Seward W. Jones	Commissioner	July 1932 - June 1948

#### Under the Department of the Interior

Capt. Carter R. Bishop, (Confederate Veteran)	Commissioner (Chairman)	Feb. 1928 - Aug. 1941
Seward W. Jones	Commissioner	July 1932 - June 1948
Dr. Douglas S. Freeman	Commissioner	July 1935 - June 1953
B. Floyd Flickinger	Acting Superintendent	Aug. 1933 - July 1935
Dr. J. Walter Coleman	Acting Superintendent	Sept. 1935 - July 1936
Dr. J. Walter Coleman	Superintendent	July 1936 - March 1938
Oscar F. Northington, Jr.	Superintendent	Feb. 1938 - June 1946

George F. Emery	Superintendent	July 1946 - Oct. 1952
Floyd B. Taylor	Superintendent	Jan. 1953 - July 1956
Bernard T. Campbell	Superintendent	July 1956 - Apr. 1959
Chester L. Brooks	Superintendent	Sep. 1959 - Aug. 1961
William L. Featherstone	Superintendent	Oct. 1961 - Aug. 1963
John T. Willett	Superintendent	Sep. 1963 - Jan. 1968
Martin R. Conway	Acting Supt.	Jan. 1968 - Feb. 1969
Martin R. Conway	Superintendent	Feb. 1969 - Aug. 1972
Larry L. Hakel	Superintendent	Oct. 1972 - July 1975
Wallace B. Elms	Superintendent	Aug. 1975 - June 1981
Glenn O. Clark	Superintendent	Jan. 1982 -

#### Park Rangers

Allen C. Burtness		Oct. 1941 - June 1942
Melvin B. Proffitt		Oct. 1942 - March 1968
Raymond R. Bladen	Park Ranger	May 1968 - July 1981
John Little	Park Ranger	July 1967 - Sept. 1967
William M. Quick	Park Ranger	July 1971 - Oct. 1972
James W. Cutler	Park Ranger	Feb. 1973 - Feb. 1974
	Supervisory Ranger	Feb. 1974 - June 1974
J. Billy Fluharty	Supervisory Ranger	Oct. 1974 -
Isaac S. Kelley	Park Ranger	Dec. 1976 -
William R. Collup	Park Ranger	May 1978 -
Mary A. Robinson	Park Technician	Aug. 1979 -
Jeffrey M. Fattibene	Park Ranger	Jan. 1981 -
Karl C. Smith	Park Ranger	Jan. 1982 -
Arthur J. Hedden	Park Ranger	July 1980 - Dec. 1980

Historical Personnel

Branch Spalding	Historical Technician	Dec. 1933 - 1934
Manning C. Coorhis	Assistant to Historical Technician (C.W.A., E.C.W.)	Dec. 1933 - March 1935
	Junior Historian	1935 - 1938
	Ranger-Historian (Seasonal)	1938 - 1940
Raleigh C. Taylor	Historical Assistant	Dec. 1933 - 1934
	Junior Historian	April 1936 (temp. assignment)
	Junior Historical Technician	March 1937 - May 1940
Oscar F. Northington, Jr.	Historical Assistant (C. W. A.)	Dec. 1933 - 1934
Edward A. Wyatt, IV	Historical Assistant (C.C.C. Historical Foreman)	Dec. 1933 - 1935
Edward Steere	Historical Assistant (C. W. A.)	Dec. 1933 - 1934
Charles R. Jackson	Historical Assistant (C. W. A.)	Dec. 1933 - 1934
Miss Elizabeth Powell	Research Assistant (C. W. A.)	Dec. 1933 - 1934
Miss Lee Booth	Research Assistant (C. W. A.)	Dec. 1933 - 1934
Miss Elizabeth Adkins	Research Assistant (C. W. A.)	Dec. 1933 - 1934
Dr. J. Walter Coleman	Junior Historian	June 1935 - Sep. 1935
Carl A. Lunquist	Junior Facilitating Personnel (Historian Helper, C.C.C.)	Jan. 1938 - June 1938
George W. Guy	Junior Historian (C.C.C. Senior Foreman)	July 1936 - June 1938

Perry O. Wilkinson	Ranger-Historian (Seasonal)	June 1937 - Oct. 1938
Calvin Goddard	Ranger-Historian (Seasonal)	June 1939 - Oct. 1939
Joseph Mills Hanson	Assistant Historical Technician	1938 - March 1942
George Y. Wilkins	Junior Historical Technician	June 1940 - April 1941
Clarence L. Johnson	Junior Historical Technician	July 1942 - June 1944
Ralph Happel	Park Historian	Nov. 1944 - Dec. 1946
Thomas P. Hughes	Ranger-Historian (Seasonal)	July 1946 - Sep. 1946
Hugh V. Hubbard, Jr.	Ranger-Historian (Seasonal)	June 1947 - Sep. 1947
Curtis Renfrew	Park Historian	Dec. 1946 - Jan. 1948
Francis J. Lucas	Ranger-Historian	June 1948 - Sep. 1949
Richard W. Lykes	Park Historian	Sep. 1948 - Sep. 1951
Donald Dietrich	Historical Aid	June 1950 - Oct. 1950
Lee A. Wallace, Jr.	Historical Aid	Oct. 1950 - Oct. 1951
	Park Historian	Oct. 1951 - Feb. 1957
Frank B. Sarles, Jr.	Historical Aid	Nov. 1951 - Feb. 1953
Herbert Olsen	Park Historian	May 1953 - June 1954
Franklin A. Cain, Jr.	Park Historian	Aug. 1954 - Aug. 1955
Howard L. Blick	Park Historian	Sep. 1955 - Aug. 1957
Thomas J. Harrison	Supervisory Historian	July 1957 - April 1963
James N. Haskett	Junior Historian	March 1958 - Aug. 1959
John W. Bond	Junior Historian	Nov. 1959 - Sep. 1960
Charles Bowie Lanford	Junior Historian	Dec. 1960 - March 1963

James F. Kretschmann	Supervisory Historian	April 1963 - Nov. 1965
William Glenn Gray	Junior Historian	June 1963 - Oct. 1964
Dale F. Glesse	Supervisory Historian	Nov. 1965 - April 1966
Donald R. Smith	Junior Historian	June 1965 - June 1966
Martin R. Conway	Supervisory Historian	May 1966 - June 1969
Myra L. Newton	Junior Historian	Sep. 1966 - Feb. 1967
Margaret G. Jones	Junior Historian	June 1967 - Jan. 1969
Thomas E. Westmoreland	Supervisory Historian	June 1969 - May 1971
Neil C. Mangum	Park Technician	April 1971 - Aug. 1975
Louis J. Venuto	Park Ranger	Jan. 1976 - Aug. 1977
William W. Shook	Park Technician	Feb. 1976 - Sep. 1977
John R. Davis	Chief of Interpretation	Dec. 1977 -
Ella S. Rayburn	Park Ranger	Jan. 1978 -
Christopher M. Calkins	Supervisory Park Ranger	May 1981 -

AdministrationClerksUnder the War Department

Miss A. C. Witt 1929 - ?

Under the Department of the Interior

Miss Elizabeth Shuster	C. W. A., Historical Educational staff	1933 - 1934 (?)
Miss Ruth Coplon		Jan. 1938 - June 1940
Mrs. Mildred S. Deane		Aug. 1941 - March 1942
Mrs. Kathryn L. Anthony		May 1942 - Nov. 1944
Mrs. Louise Happel		Jan. 1945 - Jan. 1946
Mrs. Kathryn L. Anthony	Clerk (Typing)	Jan. 1946 - May 1966
Lucia C. Camper	Administrative Technician	March 1964 -
Susan L. Alley	Clerk (Typing)	Sep. 1971 -
Ginger L. Bateman	Clerk-Typist	May 1980 - Nov. 1980
Josephine A. Carpenter	Clerk-Typist	Jan. 1981 - April 1982
Ann D. Yates	Clerk-Typist	May 1982 -

Superintendents--Poplar Grove National Cemetery

1. Miller, August <sup>1</sup>	August 20, 1867 - October 5, 1876
2. Lacy, H. C.	October 6, 1876 - April 30, 1890
3. Grant, E. L.	May 1, 1890 - January 31, 1893
4. Baldwin, B.S. (Acting)	February 1, 1893 - April 6, 1893
5. Sullivan, A. D. (Acting)	April 7, 1893 - December 11, 1893
6. Hill, Richard B.	December 12, 1893 - November 5, 1895
7. Laun, John	November 5, 1895 - July 31, 1903
8. Savage, T. H.	August 1, 1903 - July 26, 1904
9. Osbourne, J. H.	July 27, 1904 - November 30, 1904
10. Hill, Richard B.	December 1, 1904 - April 16, 1908
11. Perkinson, R. L. (Acting)	April 17, 1908 - May 17, 1908
12. Hess, George	May 18, 1908 - June 11, 1910
13. Brist, F. M. (Acting)	June 12, 1910 - August 3, 1910
14. Dye, Robert R.	August 4, 1910 - May 29, 1913
15. Brake, Theodore W. B.	May 30, 1913 - December 13, 1914
16. Bodley, James W.	December 14, 1914 - June 21, 1917
17. Blaha, J. J., Jr. (Acting)	June 22, 1917 - July 16, 1917
18. Kinter, W. P.	July 17, 1917 - December 15, 1918
19. Hill, Robert (Acting)	December 16, 1918 - January 31, 1919
20. Davis, William	February 1, 1919 - September 2, 1919
21. Lovelace, J. B.	September 3, 1919 - September 7, 1922
22. Blaha, J. J., Jr. (Acting)	September 8, 1922 - January 26, 1923
23. Tallman, John F.	January 27, 1923 - April 10, 1926
24. Bebbber, Joseph A.	April 11, 1926 - August 5, 1927

---

<sup>1</sup>. Miller acted as clerk to the superintendent of the burial corps from April 1868 to July 1869.

25. Blaha, J. J., Jr. (Acting)	August 6, 1927 - November 16, 1927
26. Jackson, Charles E.	November 17, 1927 - December 11, 1931
27. Green, William H. (Acting)	December 12, 1931 - January 6, 1932
28. Pearce, Walter J.	January 7, 1932 - August 3, 1933
29. Kavanagh, Felix E. (In charge)	August 4, 1933 - August 9, 1933
30. Green, William J. (Acting) <sup>2</sup>	August 10, 1933 - September 4, 1933
31. Moore, Benjamin F. <sup>3</sup>	September 5, 1933 - September 30, 1949

---

2. On August 10, 1933, Poplar Grove National Cemetery was transferred from the War Department to the National Park Service, Department of the Interior.

3. The position of superintendent at Poplar Grove was abolished upon the retirement of Mr. Moore.

## APPENDIX C

### LEGISLATION

#### Petersburg National Battlefield

Inspection of battlefields authorized.....Act of February 11, 1925  
 Establishment as national military park.....Act of July 3, 1926  
 Secretary of War authorized to transfer to park such portion of Camp Lee  
 Military Reservation as required in connection with establishment.....  
 .....Excerpt from Act of February 25, 1929  
 Transfer of lands from Department of the Army; boundary adjustments  
 authorized.....Act of September 7, 1949  
 Name changed; land acquisition authorized.....Act of August 24, 1962

An Act To provide for the inspection of the battle fields of the  
 siege of Petersburg, Virginia, approved February 11, 1925 (43  
 Stat. 856)

*Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representa-  
 tives of the United States of America in Congress as-  
 sembled,* That a commission is hereby created, to be  
 composed of the following members, who shall be ap-  
 pointed by the Secretary of War:

Petersburg,  
 Va., battle  
 fields.  
 Commission  
 created.  
 Army Engineer  
 officer.

(1) A commissioned officer of the Corps of Engineers,  
 United States Army;

(2) A veteran of the Civil War, who served honorably  
 in the military forces of the United States; and

United States  
 Civil War  
 veteran.

(3) A veteran of the Civil War, who served honorably  
 in the military forces of the Confederate States of  
 America.

Confederate  
 States Civil  
 War veteran.

SEC. 2. In appointing the members of the commission  
 created by section 1 of this Act the Secretary of War  
 shall, as far as practicable, select persons familiar with  
 the terrain of the battle fields of the siege of Petersburg,  
 Virginia, and the historical events associated therewith.

Qualifications  
 of commission.

SEC. 3. It shall be the duty of the commission, acting  
 under the direction of the Secretary of War, to inspect  
 the battle fields of the siege of Petersburg, Virginia, in  
 order to ascertain the feasibility of preserving and mark-  
 ing for historical and professional military study such  
 fields. The commission shall submit a report of its find-  
 ings to the Secretary of War not later than December 1,  
 1925.

Inspection and  
 report on feasi-  
 bility of pre-  
 serving, etc.,  
 for historical  
 study, etc.

SEC. 4. There is authorized to be appropriated, out of  
 any money in the Treasury not otherwise appropriated,  
 the sum of \$3,000 in order to carry out the provisions of  
 this Act.

Amount au-  
 thorized for  
 expenses.

An Act To establish a national military park at the battle fields  
 of the siege of Petersburg, Virginia, approved July 3, 1926 (44  
 Stat. 822)

*Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representa-  
 tives of the United States of America in Congress as-  
 sembled,* That in order to commemorate the campaign  
 and siege and defense of Petersburg, Virginia, in 1864  
 and 1865 and to preserve for historical purposes the

Petersburg  
 National  
 Military Park.  
 Va.  
 Established to  
 preserve battle  
 fields of, when  
 title acquired.

breastworks, earthworks, walls, or other defenses or shelters used by the armies therein the battle fields at Petersburg, in the State of Virginia, are hereby declared a national military park whenever the title to the same shall have been acquired by the United States by donation and the usual jurisdiction over the lands and roads of the same shall have been granted to the United States by the State of Virginia—that is to say, one hundred and eighty-five acres or so much thereof as the Secretary of War may deem necessary in and about the city of Petersburg, State of Virginia. (16 U.S.C. § 423.)

Acceptance of donations of lands, etc., authorized.

SEC. 2. That the Secretary of War is hereby authorized to accept, on behalf of the United States, donations of lands, interests therein, or rights pertaining thereto required for the Petersburg National Military Park. (16 U.S.C. § 423a.)

Commission to have supervision of, etc.

SEC. 3. The affairs of the Petersburg National Military Park shall, subject to the supervision and direction of the Secretary of War, be in charge of three commissioners, consisting of Army officers, civilians, or both, to be appointed by the Secretary of War, one of whom shall be designated as chairman and another as secretary of the commission. (16 U.S.C. § 423b.)

Duties of commission.

SEC. 4. It shall be the duties of the commissioners, under the direction of the Secretary of War, to superintend the opening or repair of such roads as may be necessary to the purposes of the park, and to ascertain and mark with historical tablets or otherwise, as the Secretary of War may determine, all breastworks, earthworks, walls, or other defenses or shelters, lines of battle, location of troops, buildings, and other historical points of interest within the park or in its vicinity, and the said commission in establishing the park shall have authority, under the direction of the Secretary of War, to employ such labor and service at rates to be fixed by the Secretary of War, and to obtain such supplies and materials as may be necessary to carry out the provisions of this Act. (16 U.S.C. § 423c.)

Acceptance of gifts, etc., authorized.

SEC. 5. The commission, acting through the Secretary of War, is authorized to receive gifts and contributions from States, Territories, societies, organizations, and individuals for the Petersburg National Military Park: *Provided*, That all contributions of money received shall be deposited in the Treasury of the United States and credited to a fund to be designated "Petersburg National Military Park Fund," which fund shall be applied to and expended under the direction of the Secretary of War, for carrying out the provisions of this Act. (16 U.S.C. § 423d.)

*Provided.*

Moneys to be deposited to credit of special fund.

States may mark lines of battle of their troops.

SEC. 6. It shall be lawful for the authorities of any State having had troops engaged at Petersburg, to enter upon the lands and approaches of the Petersburg Na-

tional Military Park for the purpose of ascertaining and marking the lines of battle of troops engaged therein: *Provided*, That before any such lines are permanently designated, the position of the lines and the proposed methods of marking them by monuments, tablets, or otherwise, including the design and inscription for the same, shall be submitted to the Secretary of War and shall first receive written approval of the Secretary, which approval shall be based upon formal written reports to be made to him in each case by the commissioners of the park: *Provided*, That no discrimination shall be made against any State as to the manner of designating lines, but any grant made to any State by the Secretary of War may be used by any other State. (16 U.S.C. § 423e.)

*Provides.*  
Approval of  
marking, etc.,  
by the Secre-  
tary of War  
required.

No discrimina-  
tion in design-  
ating lines.

SEC. 7. If any person shall, except by permission of the Secretary of War, destroy, mutilate, deface, injure, or remove any monument, column, statues, memorial structures, or work of art that shall be erected or placed upon the grounds of the park by lawful authority, or shall destroy or remove any fence, railing, inclosure, or other work for the protection or ornament of said park, or any portion thereof, or shall destroy, cut, hack, bark, break down, or otherwise injure any tree, bush, or shrubbery that may be growing upon said park, or shall cut down or fell or remove any timber, battle relic, tree or trees growing or being upon said park, or hunt within the limits of the park, or shall remove or destroy any breastworks, earthworks, walls, or other defenses or shelter or any part thereof constructed by the armies formerly engaged in the battles on the lands or approaches to the park, any person so offending and found guilty thereof, before any United States commissioner or court, justice of the peace of the county in which the offense may be committed, or any other court of competent jurisdiction, shall for each and every such offense forfeit and pay a fine, in the discretion of the said United States commissioner or court, justice of the peace or other court, according to the aggravation of the offense, of not less than \$5 nor more than \$500, one-half for the use of the park and the other half to the informant, to be enforced and recovered before such United States commissioner or court, justice of the peace or other court, in like manner as debts of like nature are now by law recoverable in the several counties where the offense may be committed. (16 U.S.C. § 423f.)

Penalty for de-  
stroying,  
injuring, etc.,  
property.

Recovery.

SEC. 8. The Secretary of War, subject to the approval of the President, shall have the power to make and shall make all needful rules and regulations for the care of the park, and for the establishment and marking of lines of battle and other historical features of the park. (16 U.S.C. § 423g.)

Rules, etc., to  
be prescribed.

Report to Congress on acquisition of the land.

Superintendent to be appointed.

Authorization for expenses.  
Post, p. 1140.

Sec. 9. Upon completion of the acquisition of the land and the work of the commission, the Secretary of War shall render a report thereon to Congress, and thereafter the park shall be placed in charge of a superintendent at a salary to be fixed by the Secretary of War and paid out of the appropriation available for the maintenance of the park. (16 U.S.C. § 423h.)

Sec. 10. To enable the Secretary of War to begin to carry out the provisions of this Act, there is hereby authorized to be appropriated not more than the sum of \$15,000, out of any moneys in the Treasury not otherwise appropriated, to be available until expended, after the United States has acquired title, and disbursements under this Act shall be annually reported by the Secretary of War to Congress. (See 16 U.S.C. § 423i.)

Excerpt from "An Act To authorize appropriations for construction at military posts, and for other purposes," approved February 25, 1929 (45 Stat. 1301, 1305)

Petersburg  
Military Park,  
Va.  
Portion of  
Camp Lee,  
may be transferred to.

Vol. 44, p. 822.

Sec. 4. That the Secretary of War be, and he is hereby, authorized to transfer to the Petersburg National Military Park such portion of the Camp Lee Military Reservation, Virginia, as in his discretion may be required in connection with the establishment of the Petersburg National Military Park, as authorized by the Act of Congress approved July 3, 1926.

An Act To add certain surplus land to Petersburg National Military Park, Virginia, to define the boundaries thereof, and for other purposes, approved September 7, 1949 (63 Stat. 691)

Petersburg  
National  
Military Park,  
Va.  
Additional  
land.

*Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled,* That the Department of the Army is hereby authorized and directed to transfer to the Department of the Interior, without reimbursement, two tracts of land, comprising two hundred six acres, more or less, situated on either side of Siege Road adjacent to Petersburg National Military Park, Virginia. Upon completion of such transfer, all lands, interest in lands, and other property in Federal ownership and under the administration of the National Park Service as a part of or in conjunction with Petersburg National Military Park, in and about the city of Petersburg, Virginia, and comprising one thousand five hundred thirty-one acres, more or less, upon publication of the description thereof in the Federal Register by the Secretary of the Interior, shall constitute the Petersburg National Military Park. (16 U.S.C. § 423a-1.)

Sec. 2. The Secretary of the Interior is further authorized to adjust the boundary of the Petersburg National Military Park through purchase, exchange, or transfer: *Provided*, That in doing so the total area of the park will not be increased and that such changes will

become effective upon publication of the description thereof in the Federal Register by the Secretary of the Interior. (16 U.S.C. § 423a-2.)

**An Act To change the name of the Petersburg National Military Park, to provide for acquisition of a portion of the Five Forks Battlefield, and for other purposes, approved August 24, 1962 (76 Stat. 403)**

*Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled,* That the Petersburg National Military Park, established under authority of the Act of July 3, 1926 (44 Stat. 822; 16 U.S.C. 423a, 423b-423h), and enlarged pursuant to the Act of September 7, 1949 (63 Stat. 691; 16 U.S.C. 423a-1, 423a-2), is redesignated the Petersburg National Battlefield.

Petersburg  
National  
Battlefield.  
Designation.

SEC. 2. The Secretary of the Interior, in furtherance of the purposes of the Acts referred to in section 1 of this Act, may acquire by purchase with donated or appropriated funds, exchange, transfer, or by such other means as he deems to be in the public interest, not to exceed twelve hundred acres of land or interests in land at the site of the Battle of Five Forks for addition to the Petersburg National Battlefield. Lands and interests in lands acquired by the Secretary pursuant to this section shall, upon publication of a description thereof in the Federal Register, become a part of the Petersburg National Battlefield, and thereafter shall be administered by the Secretary of the Interior in accordance with the provisions of the Act entitled "An Act to establish a National Park Service, and for other purposes," approved August 25, 1916 (39 Stat. 535; 16 U.S.C. 1, 2, 3), as amended and supplemented.

Publication  
in F.R.

SEC. 3. There are hereby authorized to be appropriated such sums, but not more than \$90,000, as are necessary to acquire land pursuant to section 2 of this Act.

Appropriation.

An Act to authorize additional appropriations for the acquisition of lands and interests in lands within the Sawtooth National Recreation Area in Idaho. (92 Stat. 3487) (P.L. 95-625)

*Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled,*

TITLE III—ADDITION OF EPPES MANOR TO  
PETERSBURG NATIONAL BATTLEFIELD

\* \* \* \* \*

SEC. 313. (a) The Secretary is authorized to acquire the historic Eppes Manor, and such other lands adjacent thereto, not to exceed twenty-one acres, for addition to the Petersburg National Battlefield, as generally depicted on the map entitled "Petersburg National Battlefield, Virginia", numbered APMA 80,001, and dated May 1978.

(b) There are hereby authorized to be appropriated not to exceed \$2,200,000 to carry out the purposes of this section.

\* \* \* \* \*

Approved November 10, 1978.

ILLUSTRATIONS

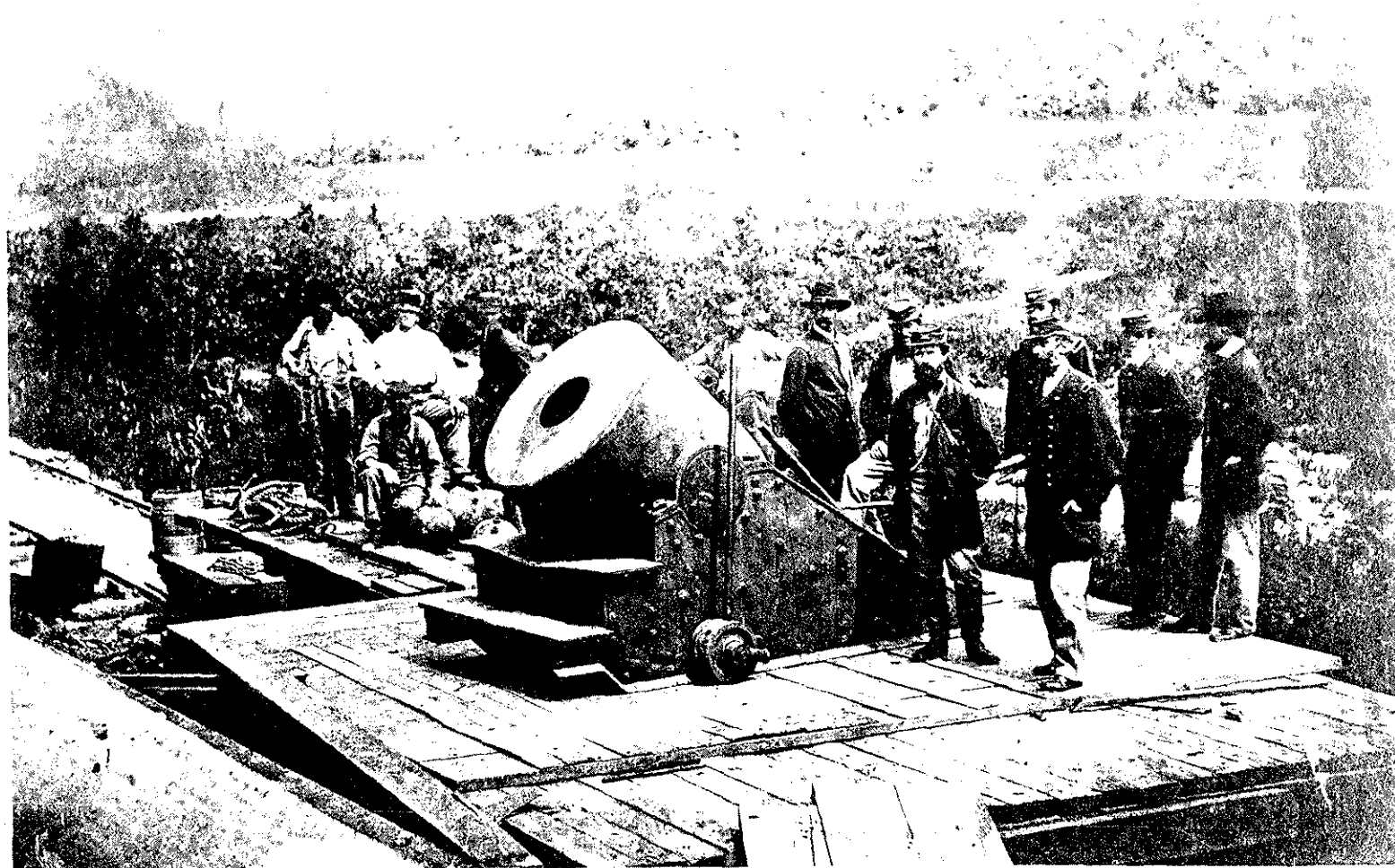
1. 30-pounder Parrott rifled siege guns served by the First Connecticut Heavy Artillery at Union Battery IV (Confederate Battery Five). National Archives.



2. Gracie's Salient on the Confederate defenses east of Petersburg. It was named for Brig. Gen. Archibald Gracie, Jr., who was killed nearby on Dec. 2, 1864. Library of Congress.

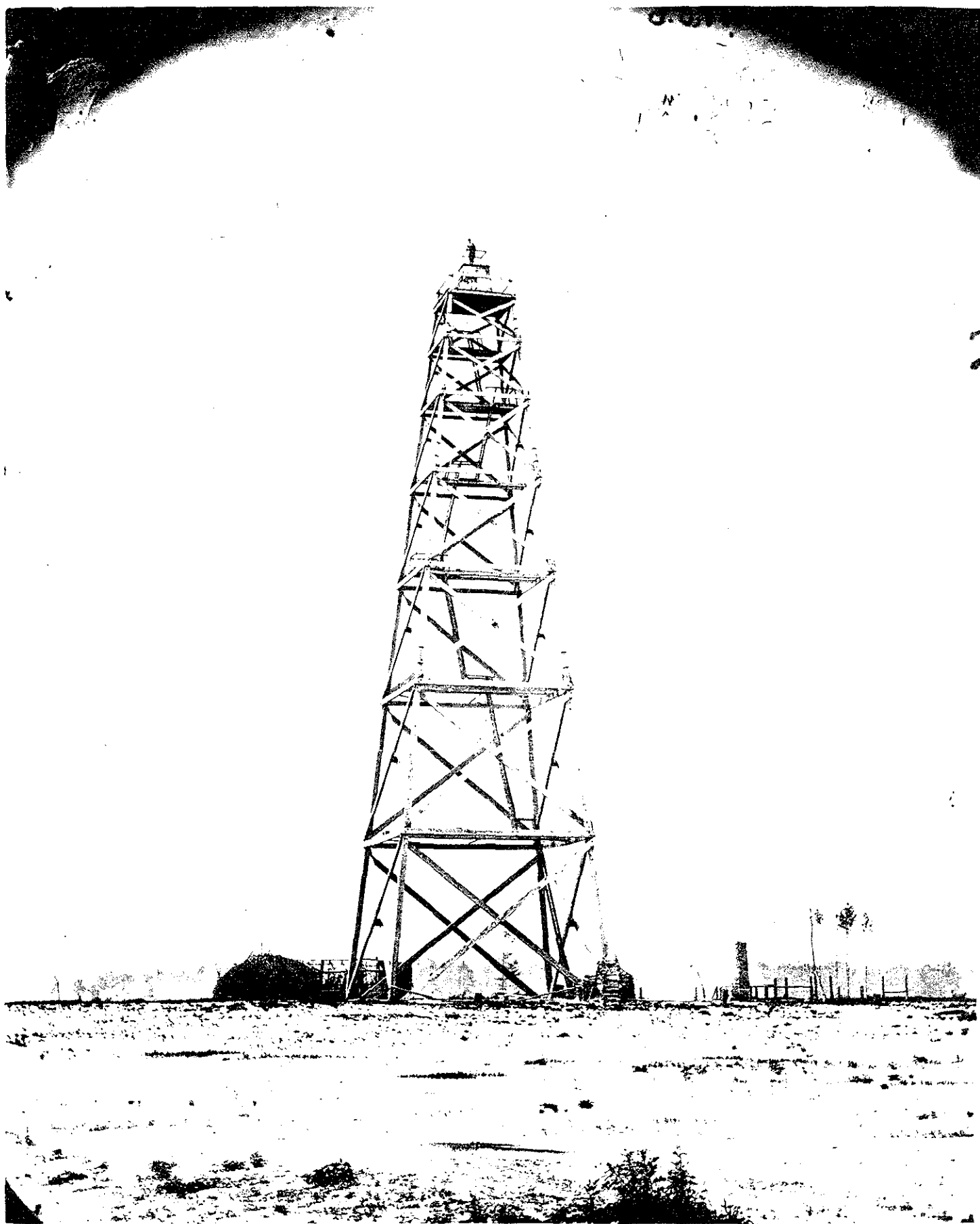


3. The 13-inch sea-coast mortar known as "The Dictator," or "The Petersburg Express." Manned by the First Connecticut Heavy Artillery, it weighed 17,000 pounds, and is shown here in position in a ravine at Union Battery IV. With a powder charge of 20 pounds, it had a range of 4,200 yards, or a little more than two miles. Library of Congress.

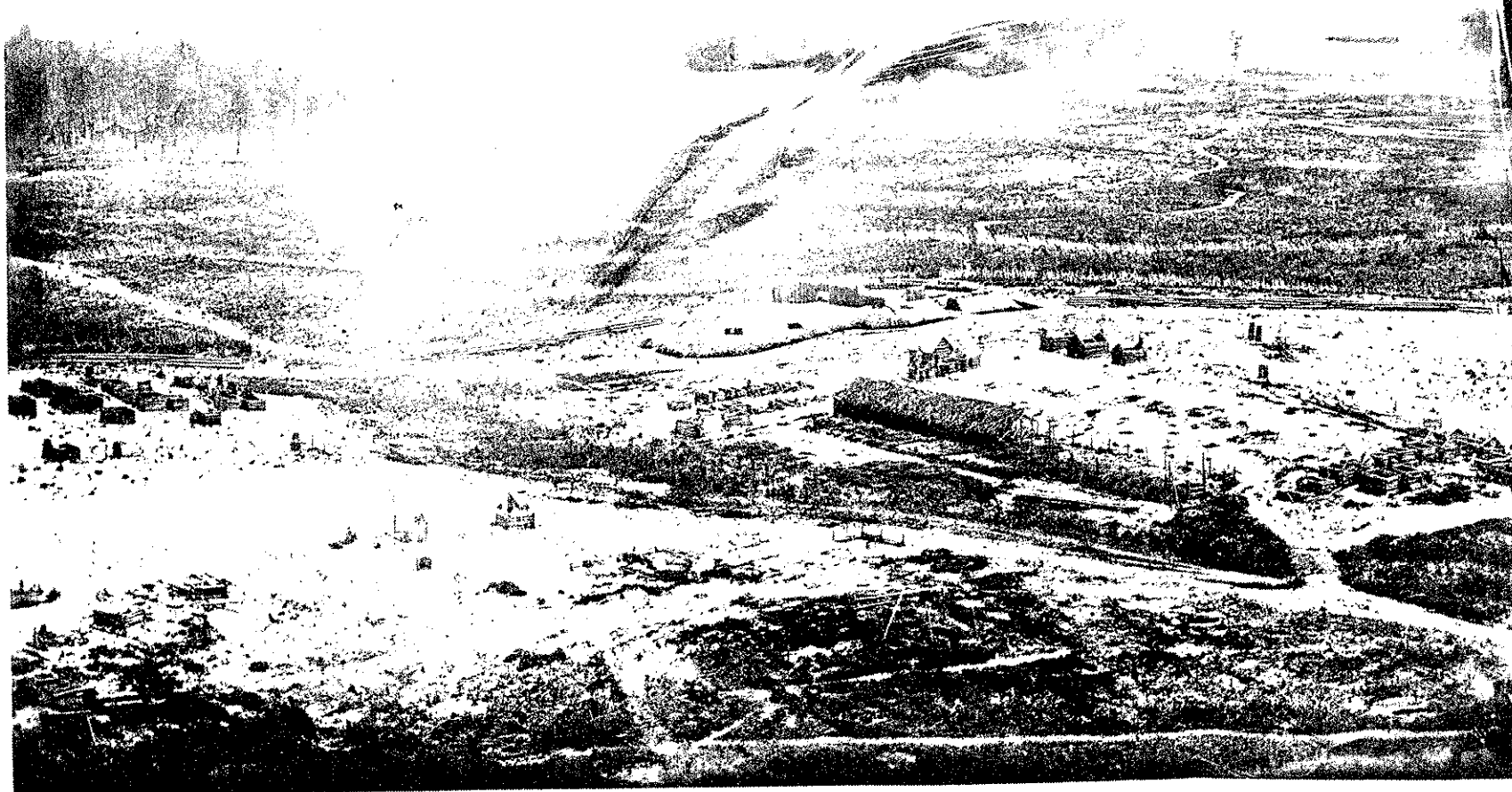


*13 inch mortar "Dictator"  
in front of Petersburg, Va.*

4. The signal tower, 150 feet high, on Pebbles' farm, completed in February 1865. Jarratt's Hotel battlefield guide book in 1866 recommended the view from the tower for those who did not suffer from dizziness and had the energy to make the climb. The tower was demolished several years after the war. Library of Congress.



5. View of Fort Conahey, completed in November 1864.  
It was named for Second Lieutenant John Conahey, 118th  
Pennsylvania Volunteers, who was killed at the battle  
of Peebles' farm. Library of Congress.



6. View of Petersburg in 1865, looking south across the Appomattox River. The spire on the left is the courthouse, which is still standing. National Archives.

2017-03-08-02



7. The Friend house (Whitehill) as it appeared in 1918.



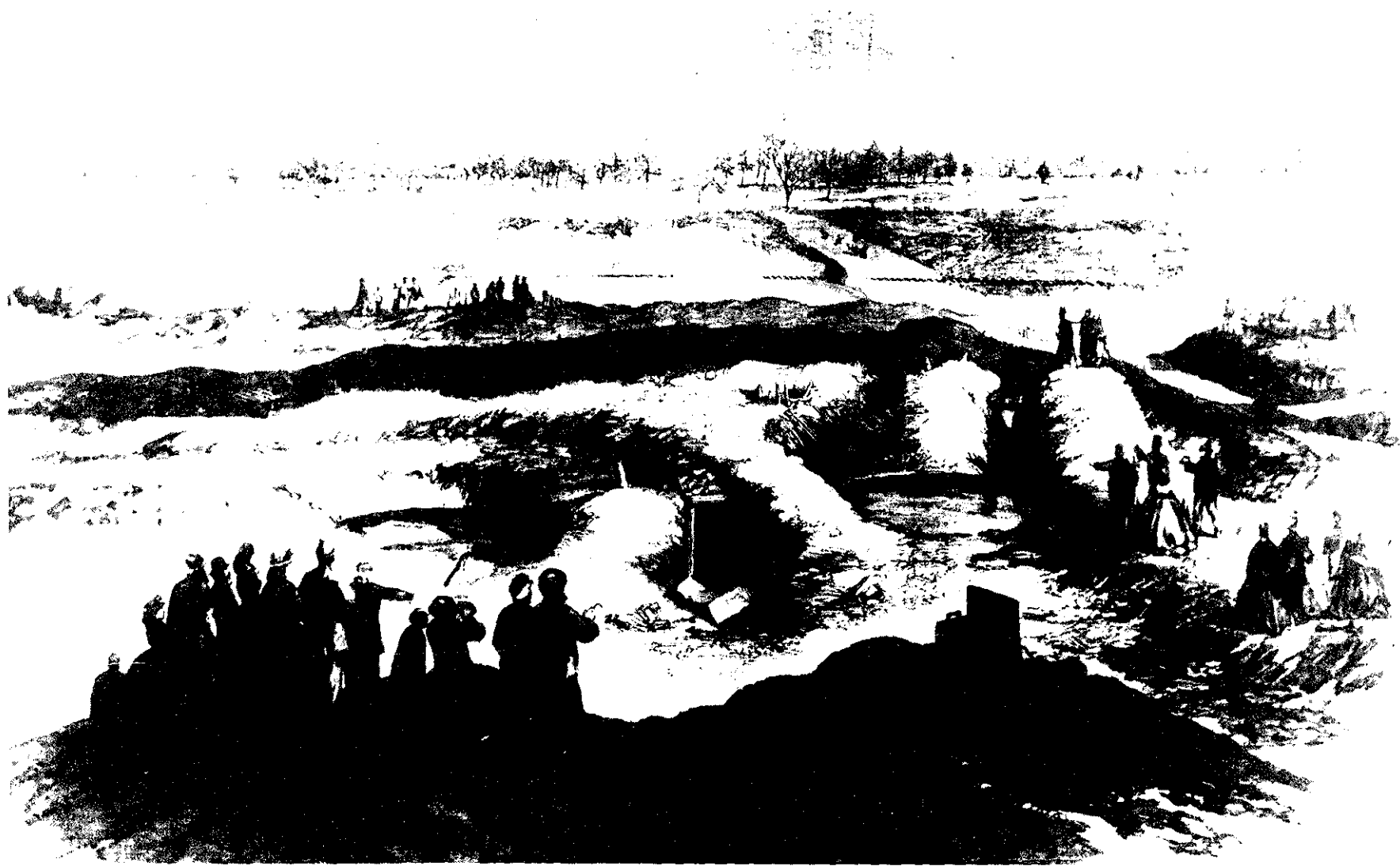
8. Camp of the 50th New York Engineers, 1865.  
Poplar Grove National Cemetery has occupied the site since  
1866. The rustic chapel, which also served as a theater  
stood until 1868.



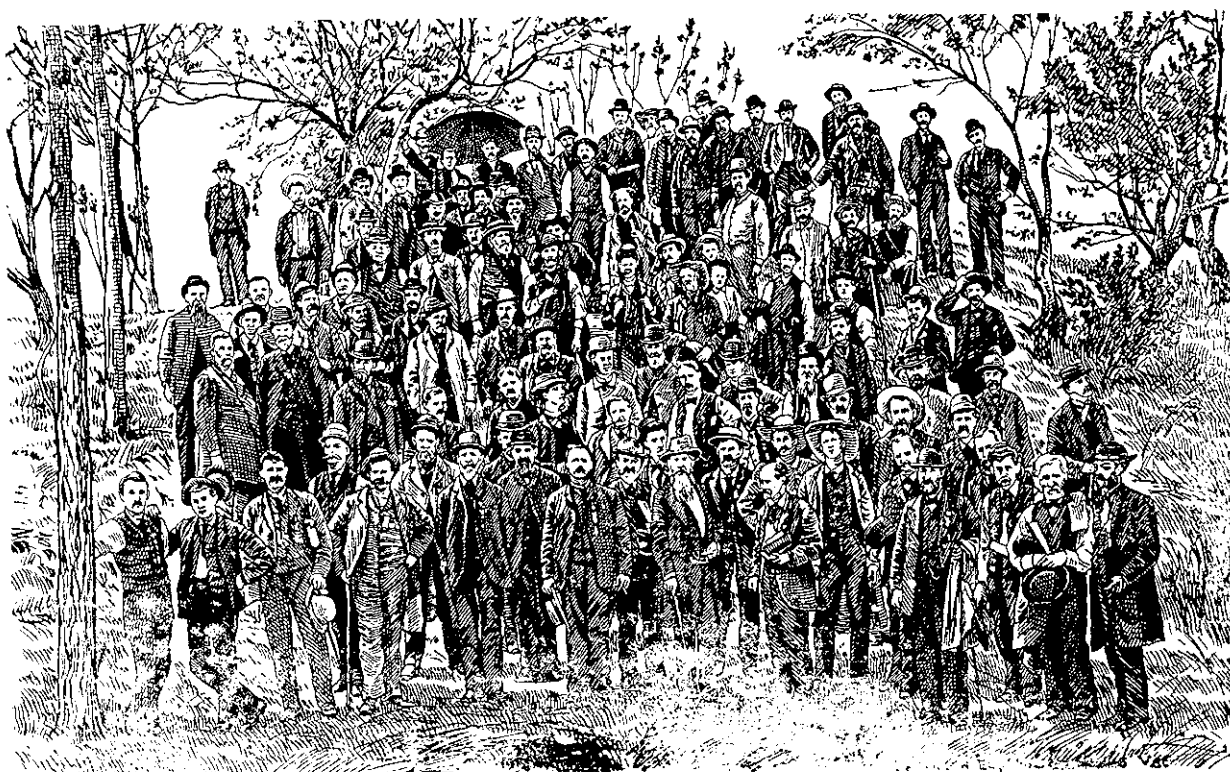
9. View of the Crater, April 1865, looking west toward Cemetery Hill and Petersburg. The measurements of the crater after the explosion of 8,000 pounds of powder on July 30, 1864, were about 170 feet in length, 60 to 80 feet wide, and 30 feet deep. Library of Congress.



10. Visitors at the Crater in the summer of 1865. The view is looking east, across the Norfolk & Petersburg Railroad, toward Fort Morton and Spring Garden, the Taylor farm. The Union mine tunnel is seen in the foreground. From Frank Leslie's Illustrated Weekly Newspaper, Aug. 19, 1865.



11. Reunion of Confederate and Union veterans at the Crater, May 3, 1887. The central figure, with long beard and cane, is General William Mahone. Courtesy Dept. of Tourism, City of Petersburg, Va.



12. The Crater battlefield c. 1910, when it was still owned by the Griffith family. The "relic house" on the right stood until about 1930.



Monument and Advance Position 2nd Penn. Regiment, "Crater"—July 30th, 1861. Griffith Farm, Petersburg, Va.

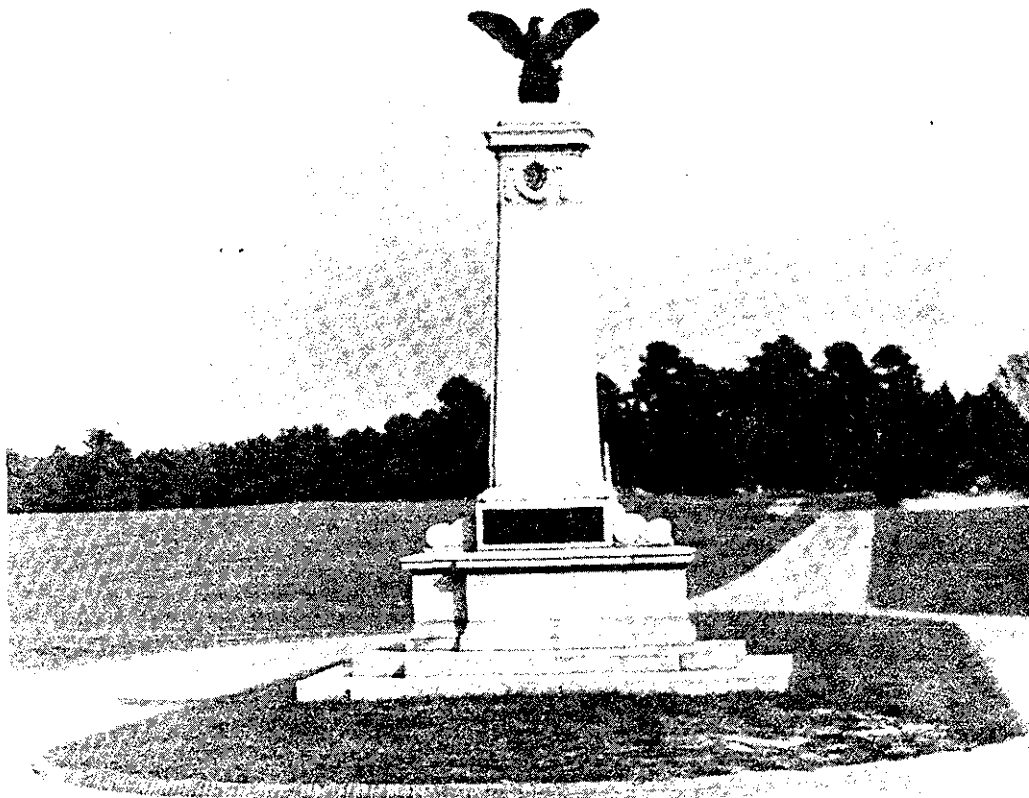
13. Dedication of the monument to the First Maine Heavy Artillery, September 30, 1895. Survivors of the regiment are grouped in the center, and members of the George H. Thomas Post, Grand Army of the Republic, Petersburg, are on the left. Confederate veterans are on the right.



14. Dedication of the Third Division (Pennsylvania),  
Ninth Corps monument, May 19, 1909. President Taft's  
carriage is seen in the foreground. Franklin W.  
Smith Collection.



15. The Massachusetts monument on the Crater battlefield; dedicated on November 13, 1911. "Colonel Jim" Anderson was on the committee appointed to select a design for the monument.



16. Colonel James Anderson (1848-1926) of Springfield, Mass., a beloved Union army veteran who worked for the establishment of a battlefield park at Petersburg. Courtesy Dept. of Tourism, City of Petersburg, Va.



17. Captain Henry N. Comey, Union army veteran of Danvers, Mass., who was a commissioner for the Petersburg National Military Park from January 1928 until his death in 1932 at the age of ninety-two.



18. General Stith Bolling, who was elected President of the Petersburg National Battlefield Park Association in 1898. From the collection of the City of Petersburg, Va.



19. Staff, A. P. Hill Camp, Confederate Veterans,  
Petersburg, Va., 1904. Standing on the right is Captain  
Carter R. Bishop, Commissioner, Petersburg National  
Military Park, 1928-1941. From the collection of  
the City of Petersburg, Va.



20. Ground-breaking ceremony, May 15, 1932, at Fort Stedman, for the first road to be built under contract in the Petersburg National Military Park. Left to right: John R. Jolly, Mayor of Petersburg; J. V. Colston, Resident Park Engineer; Gen. Homer T. Atkinson, UCV; Congressman Patrick H. Drewry; Major Arthur E. Wilbourn, U. S. Army; and Franklin W. Smith, President, Petersburg Battlefield Park Association.



21. CCC enrollees transplanting trees, 1935

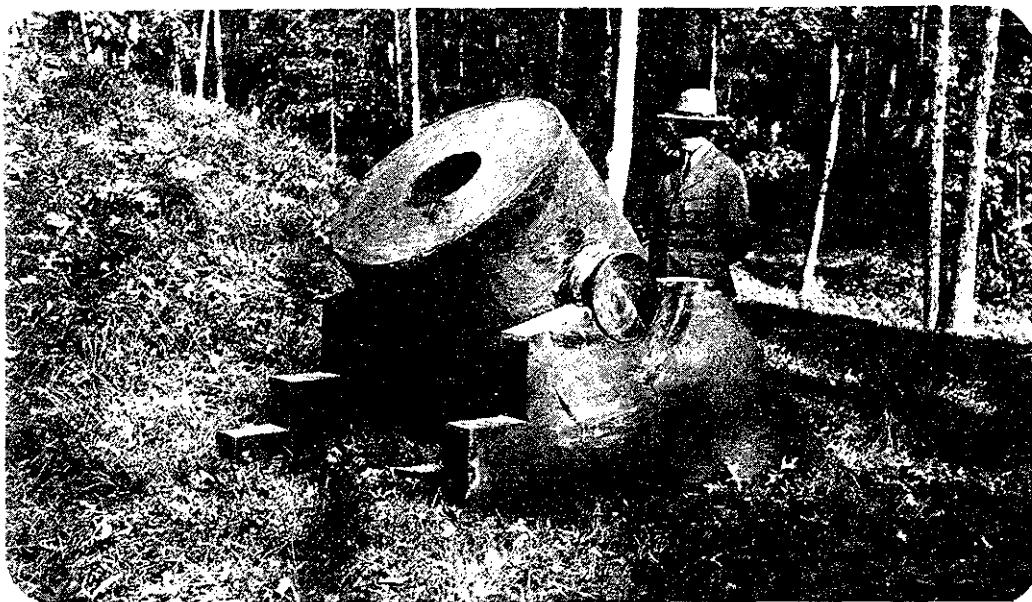
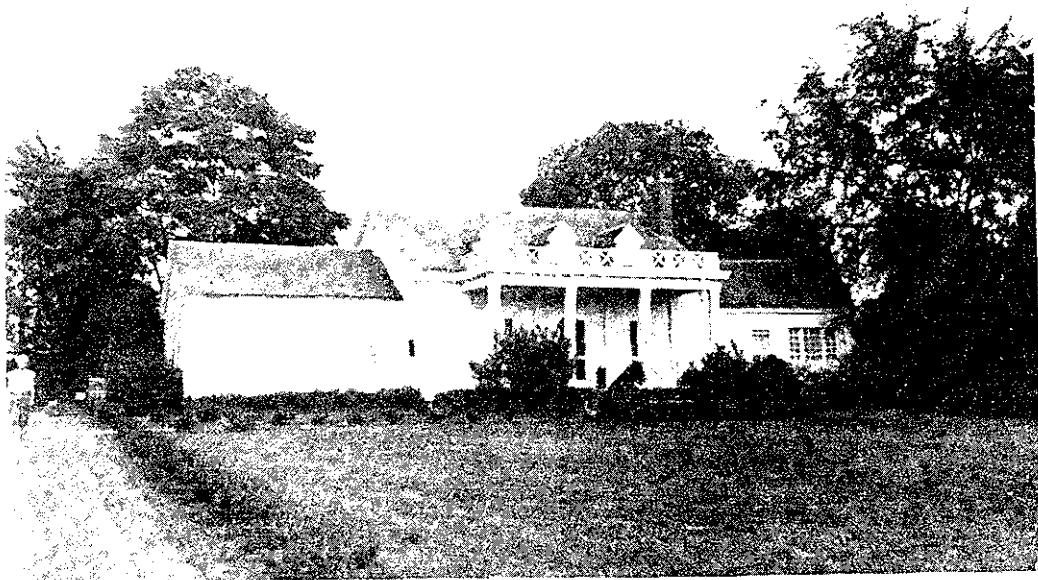


22. Capt. Carter R. Bishop, Confederate veteran and Commissioner, Petersburg National Military Park, 1928-1941. Photograph taken in 1940 at a sunken section of the Union mine tunnel, looking toward the Crater.

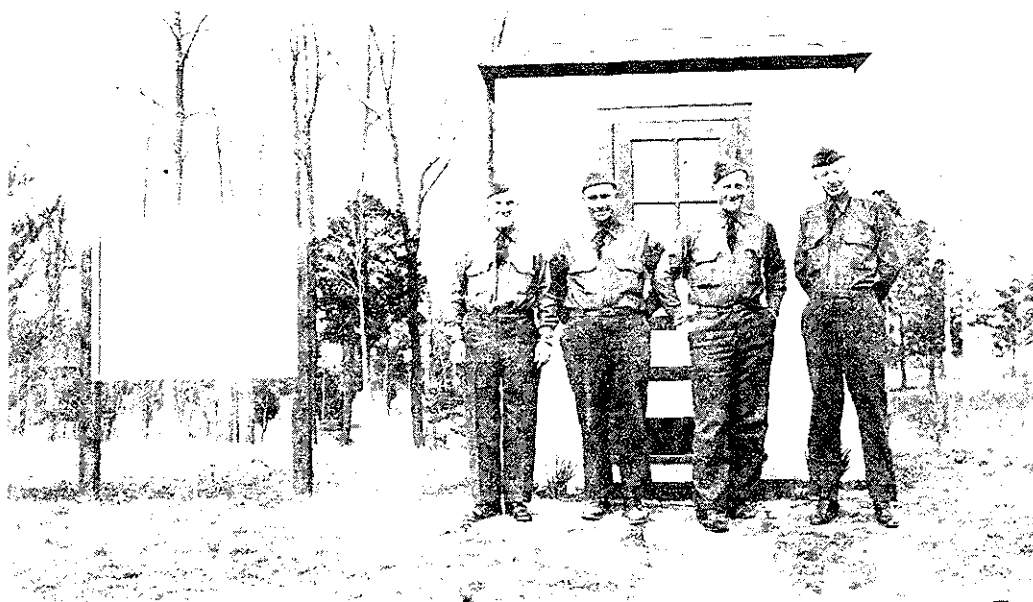


23. Visitor Center, 1956, Crater battlefield, formerly the superintendent's residence, and the Crater Golf Club.

24. Plaster and lath replica of "The Dictator," in position at Battery Five, October 1935.



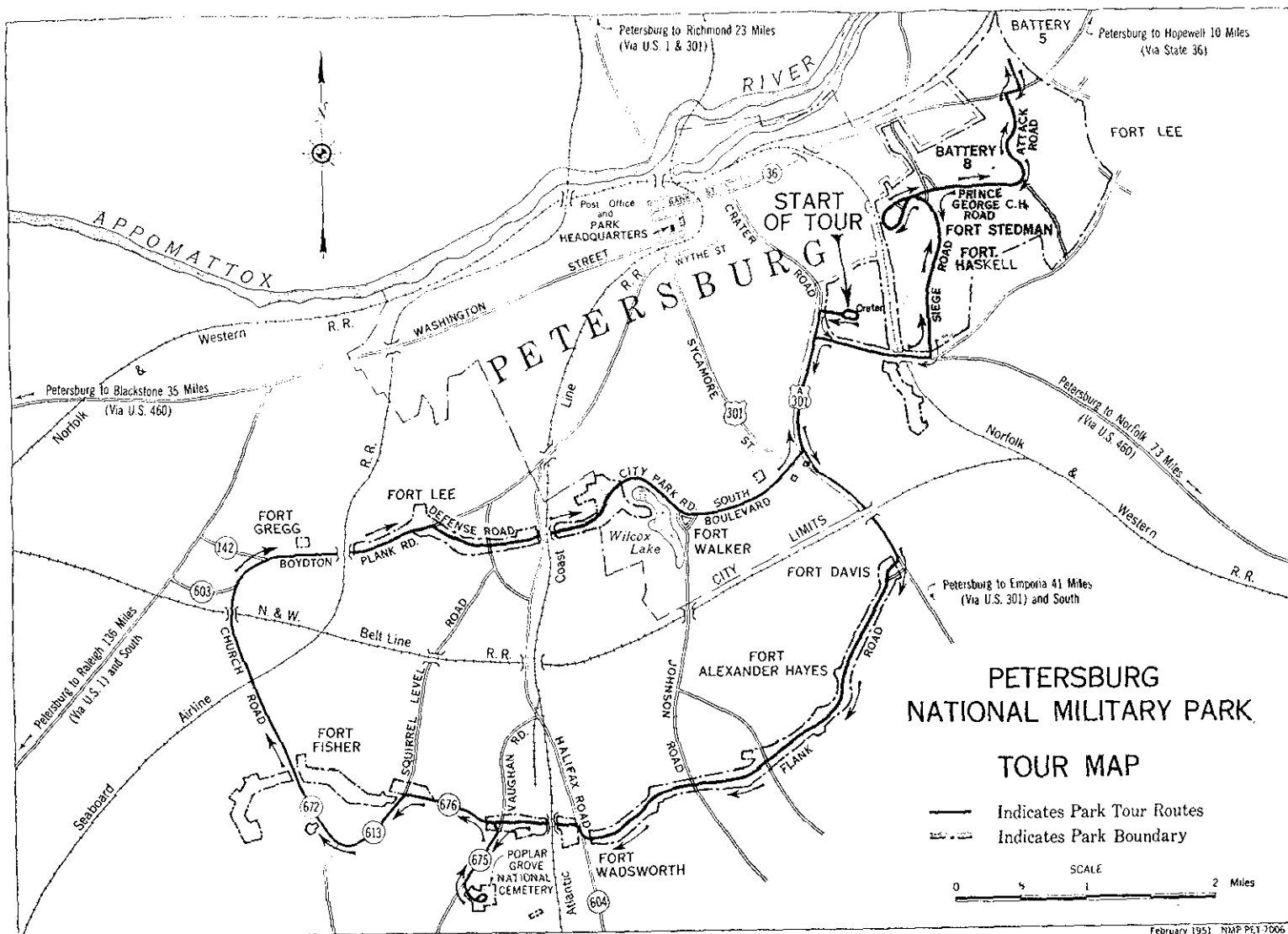
25. OOC guides at Battery Five Contact Station, March  
1936.



26. Soldiers from nearby Fort Lee visit "The Dictator"  
a few years after World War II.



27. Park Tour Map, 1951.



28. Appomattox Manor, March 1982.

